

NATIONAL ARCHIVES & PUBLIC RECORDS SERVICES
OF PAPUA NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORTS

DISTRICT: GULF

STATION: KEREMA

VOLUME No: 17

ACCESSION No: 496.

1938 - 1939

Filed by/for the National Archives of Papua New Guinea,
PORT MORESBY - 1989.

Sole Custodian: National Archives of Papua New Guinea.

Papua New Guinea Patrol Reports

Digitized version made available by



Copyright: Government of Papua New Guinea. This digital version made under a license granted by the National Archives and Public Records Services of Papua New Guinea.

Use: This digital copy of the work is intended to support research, teaching, and private study.

Constraints: This work is protected by the U.S. Copyright Law (Title 17, U.S.C.) and the laws of Papua New Guinea. Use of this work beyond that allowed by "fair use" requires written permission of the National Archives of Papua New Guinea. Responsibility for obtaining permissions and any use and distribution of this work rests exclusively with the user and not the UC San Diego Library.

Note on digitized version: A microfiche copy of these reports is held at the University of California, San Diego (Mandeville Special Collections Library, MSS 0215). The digitized version presented here reflects the quality and contents of the microfiche. Problems which have been identified include misfiled reports, out-of-order pages, illegible text; these problems have been rectified whenever possible. The original reports are in the National Archives of Papua New Guinea (Accession no. 496).

PATROL REPORT OF: KEREMA - GULF DISTRICT.
 ACCESSION NO. 496
 VOL, NO: 17 : 1938 - 1939 NUMBER OF REPORTS: 20 .

17

REPORT NO	FOLIO	OFFICER CONDUCTING PATROL	AREA PATROLLED	MAPS/ PHOTOS	PERIOD OF PATROL
[1] 1 OF 1938/39	1-7	JBC. BRAMELL PO.	SILLO, WAMINI, KARAMA, KCARLI, LILIFIRU, HABUHASU.	-	20.7.38 -
[2] 2 "	8-40	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the TAURI POLICE CAMP via the ALBERT MOUNTAIN.	-	21.7.38 - 5.9.38
[3] 3 "	41-51	A.T. TIMPERLEY PO.	the TAURI P.C.	-	15.8.38 -
[4] 4 "	52-68	A.T. TIMPERLEY PO.	From TAURI POLICE CAMP to KEREMA	-	25.8.38 - 9.9.38
[5] 5 "	69-77	G.W. TOOGOOD PO.	PORT MORESBY & BACK MEDICAL ATTENTION	-	21.7.38 - 22.9.38
[6] 6 "	78-83	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the KARAMA DISTRICT & back to KEREMA.	-	27.9.38 - 30.9.38
[7] 7 "	84-102	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the UPPER VAILALA RIVER DISTRICT.	-	17.10.38 - 4.11.38
[8] 8 "	103-113	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the Villages in the vicinity of KEREMA STATION.	-	-
[9] 10 "	114-157	G.W. TOOGOOD PO.	Eastern boundary & TIVERI police Camp & Kovic.	-	2.10.38 - 21.12.38
[10] 11 "	158-190	D.F.M. RUTLEDGE ARM.	All Villages in MURO, AREHAYA, CROKOLO, AUMA, VAILALA.	-	17.10.38 - 20.12.38
[11] 12 "	191-194	F.A. BENSTED PO.	MEI & UARIFI Villages in KEREMA BAY.	-	28.12.38 - 30.12.38
[12] 13 "	195-202	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the OPAO Villages.	-	17.1.39 - 21.1.39
[13] 14 "	204-210	G.W. TOOGOOD PO.	TIVERI Police Camp.	-	23.1.39 - 9.2.39
[14] 15 "	211-214	W.H.H. THOMPSON ARM.	KEREMA TO PAIRUKU.	-	7.2.39 - 11.2.39
[15] 16 "	215-219	W.H.H. THOMPSON ARM.	CROKOLO.	-	16.3.39 - 21.5.39
[16] 17 "	220-235	F.A. BENSTED PO.	the western boundary of the Gulf Division	-	4.3.39 - 5.4.39
[17] 18 "	236-245	G.W. TOOGOOD PO.	Eastern Boundary.	-	27.4.39 - 2.6.39
[18] 19 "	246-253	F.A. BENSTED PO.	The TIVERI POLICE CAMP & MINING Camps	-	30.5.39 - 9.6.39
[19] 20 "	254-258	F.A. BENSTED PO.	SILLO CREEK.	-	14.6.39 - 15.6.39
[20] 21 "	259-265	G.W. TOOGOOD PO.	PORT MORESBY.	-	14.6.39 -

KEREMA SUBDISTRICT

GULF DISTRICT

PATROL REPORTS:

1938/39

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

No.1 38/39.

KUREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by J.B.C. Bramell P.O. to

Port Moresby for the purpose of

Leave

Left Station on 20th. July 1938 Returned to Station on _____

Number of Carriers employed 72 - unit - 118 Number of Police taken One.

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge _____

Villages visited SILU, WAMAI, K RAMA, KOARU, LILIFIRU, HABUHABU, ULITAI, MIRIVASI, ENBE, BIARU, LOCEA, LOVE, KIVORI, AVIALA, PINYPAKA

- (1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.
- (2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.
- (3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.
- (4) The space below is not to be written in.
- (5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.-1.000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 19th Aug, 1938

Ramin R.M.G.D.
Officer in charge of Station

Resident Magistrates Office,
Port Moresby.

2nd August 1938.

The Resident Magistrate,
Kerema, G.D.



Sir,

Please find enclosed Patrol Report No.1 38/39 for
perusal and signature.

J. Bramell
.....

Report of Patrol from Kerema to Kairuku

made by

J.B.C. Bramell P.O.

Wednesday 20/7/38.

At 8 a.m. I started from Kerema Station accompanied by A.C. MANA a Kairuku policeman along with a Purari (D.D.) prisoner who had escaped from Kairuku gaol.

Utilising 14 Ipini natives as carriers we set off along the Cupola track. These natives carried well over the Cupola as the track was in first class condition due to a recent dry spell. After 2½ hours hard walking we descended to the beach then went on as far as Silo village.

Here carriers were changed then we continued by the beach to Koaru arriving at 5 p.m.

The Silo, Wamai and Karama groups were found only in fair condition. Heavy seas had done much damage to the fences and houses making the villages look very dilapidated. At the moment it did not seem a fair thing to place any burdensome task upon the inhabitants as most of the able bodied men were being required for the Tauri River Patrol and very few could be found in the villages.

On reaching Koaru I felt very stiff and sore after the long days tramp on the beach. It seemed quite a new experience after six months constant patrolling in the mountains.

Heavy rain commenced just as we reached the well built rest house

(Carriers 14 - units 28)

Thursday 21/7/38.

Rising early I left for Lilifiru with 14 Koaru carriers. Koaru village, as usual, could not be faulted and Lilifiru likewise was very good. The rest house and barracks there were in excellent condition and clean.

The nasty crossing to Habuhabu was done by using three canoes and on arrival carriers were changed. These carriers took me as far as Ulitai which we reached by mid-afternoon all hot and tired.

Habuhabu, although lacking a village policeman, was found in fair condition throughout and well fenced - barracks were also fair.

At Kukipi I met Mr. Higginson who was about to start on a trip to Tiveri by launch. He told me that Oil Search Ltd. had not yet shifted their base camp from across the bay.

(carriers 14 - units 28)

Friday 22/7/38.

During the night it rained heavily but eased off when starting at 7 a.m.

Using 14 Ulitai natives as carriers we commenced by walking through the village of Ulitai. This village as a whole was found good, most houses were well built, ground clean and fenced. The water-pump was being kept in serviceable condition. On coming to Mirivasi nothing could be found out of place so we made the crossing of the Lakekamur River by ferry which took two trips.

From Lalapipi a well cleared road for about a mile through the coconut plantation led us once more to the beach then after making four more river crossings came to Lese. Here the Motumtu carriers were paid off and new carriers were obtained who took us as far as Iokea.

Lese, Biarua and Iokea villages were all found in good condition, clean and well fenced especially the latter where the greater majority of houses are built from squared timber and have been placed in line, leaving avenues between the rows. The rest house there was exceptionally well built after the regulated style.

Late in the afternoon I visited Mr. Nixon of the L.M.S. at Moru where I stopped for dinner.

(carriers 14 - units 28)

Saturday 23/7/38.

Waking early I left the R.H. with 16 Iokea carriers and when passing the L.M.S. station stopped and breakfasted with Mr. Nixon.

Continuing leisurely along the beach we came to the scattered villages of Love. The houses could not be compared with those of Iokea but all were surrounded by strongly made fences and the grounds were spotlessly clean.

A little further on I stopped to give carriers a rest and purchased some coconuts for them, as the beach walking was found extremely hot in the blazing sun.

On passing the area where Papuan Apinaipi Petroleum Co. was operating we were compelled to make a brief halt as the tide was a little too high to get round the rocky points of Cape Possession. This halt gave me the opportunity to visit Mr. Turner who was in charge of the labour of P.A.P.

At 2.30 p.m. we arrived at Kivori village rest house (C.D.). Carriers seemed fagged out and I didn't feel so fit myself after my first attack of fever which I had just shaken off at Kerema - it had left me very weak.

The general appearance of Kivori village was poor and houses badly built. I think the cause was due to the scarcity of timber as I could not see any suitable trees for building for miles round.

(carriers 16 - units 16)

Sunday 24/7/38.

The V.C. of Kivori, as I was informed, was away at his garden somewhere in the bush, so rising early A.C. MANA and a councillor were sent into the village to obtain carriers.

The required number arrived at 7 a.m. so we set off along the beach. On reaching Waima I intended making a change in carriers but as few men could be found at this time of the day I pressed on to Pinipaka. On passing a small village called Aviala several fresh carriers were engaged, who changed with some of the Kivori natives who did not seem too strong.

About 4 miles from Pinipaka my feet became blistered so hailing a passing canoe the remainder of the monotonous beach journey was made in remarkably quick time.

At Pinipaka, after the carriers had been paid off, all gear was placed on the ferry canoe and by putting up a sail a fast trip to Kairuku Station was made. En route, the launch Chinsurah was intercepted and I was able to persuade the captain to call back when returning from Vailala and take me to Port Moresby.

On arriving at Kairuku I reported to A.R.M. Thompson.

(carriers 14 - units 18)

Monday 25/7/38.

Reported to A.R.M. for duty then handed over the escaped Purari prisoner.

While awaiting the return of the Chinsurah I spent the day at general office work and on patrol report.

Tuesday 26/7/38.

Attended 7 a.m. fall-in then at 9 a.m. reported to A.R.M's. office to do further station duties.

Wednesday 27/7/38.

Spent the day working at A.R.M's. office.

Thursday 28/7/38.

Reported at office then later visited Sister Odette of the R.C.M. who gave relief to an aching tooth which had been troubling me for some considerable time.

During the morning I met Mr. Pratt and Mr. Hides of O.S. Ltd. who had come to prepare a base camp in this quarter for their survey work.

Friday 29/7/38.

After spending the day at the A.R.M's. office I started packing at 4 p.m.

The Chinsurah arrived late in the afternoon with passengers Mrs. Bensted and Sister Fairhall who were bound for Port Moresby.

At 6 p.m. I started loading my gear aboard the launch and it was well after sundown before the job was completed. We sailed at midnight.

Saturday 30/7/38.

The trip through to Moresby was by no means pleasant. The launch had a full cargo of copra and when getting outside seas just washed the deck. The female passengers spent a very uncomfortable trip as little accommodation was provided.

The launch berthed at 1.30 p.m. and after getting my gear landed I found it too late to report to the A.M.C.D. so was compelled to postpone it until the Monday morning.

J. Bennett
..... P.O.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

2 of 38/39

KEREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to
the Tauri Police Camp via The Albert Mountains for the purpose of
conveying stores to the Police Camp and also to find and establish
a new route to the Camp from Kerema Station.

Left Station on 21st. July, 1938 Returned to Station on 5th. September, 1938

Number of Carriers employed 235 Number of Police taken 22

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Whaler and Canoes:- F.A. Bensted.

Villages visited DEBARGU. AGWAI'IA. JAMBOI. NIVU. BEGAI. MADEVA. IOWAI. DEMEI.
AIBUNGA. BEIA. AMOWA. BAWADUNGA. DABAUMGA. BOBOBUNGA. UMBOI'IA. GANAGAIWA
WAMGAIWU. WAGAI'IA. JAI'IA. NEGAINI. WAGWI. IURO. IOBI. ABEI'IA. AGWEDIA
BOI'IA. GAGO. DIAGWA'AUA. DAMUNGA. AMAMIO.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.-1.055.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 23rd Sept, 1938

F.A. Bensted

Officer in charge of Station

R.M.G.D.

P. 31

KEREMA

Sir,

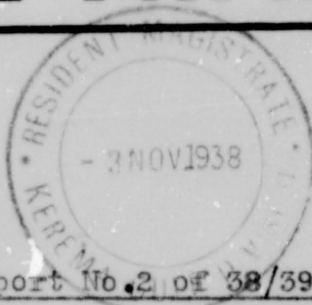
The Map to accompany this Patrol Report is to be found incorporated with the Map of the Tauri Patrol No.2. and is on a scale of one inch to a mile.

This map will be found in the file of Patrol Maps.

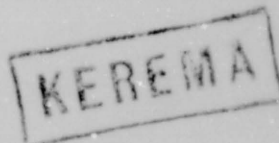
F. A. Bensted P.O.

MINUTE PAPER

P. 30
R.M.G.D.,
Kerema.



No. 2250/315/38.



Patrol Report No. 2 of 38/39.

The abovementioned Patrol Report was referred to His Excellency the Lieutenant-Governor, who writes :-

" It is unfortunate that Mr. Bensted met with this accident; he is to be congratulated upon the courage with which he continued the patrol. "

for *Abrahamson*
G.S.
24.10.1938.

Noted and returned with thanks.

F.A. Bensted. P.O.

4/II/38

Report of Tauri Patrol No. 1 from Kerema Station to the Tauri Police Camp via The Albert Mountains; for the purpose of Conveying stores and also to find and establish a new Route to the Camp.

The Patrol on leaving Kerema was composed of the following:-

Mr P.O. Bonsted, O.I.C.
Mr F.O. Toogood.

H/C SAGOI.
A.C. ABAIA.
A.C. DOMAMASI.
A.C. WAINO.
A.C. KEKERE.
A.C. MANAI.
A.C. BERI.
A.C. MIRO.
A.C. SABEO.
A.C. KADA.
A.C. KUWE.
A.C. IADAMA.
A.C. JIKI.
A.C. AN'U.
A.C. UFA.
A.C. IRIRI.

KEREMA

Together with 74 prisoner Carriers and 161 free carriers; making a total of 255 persons exclusive of two personal attendants.

The amount of stores and gear was such that it would be necessary to carry out a relay the whole distance to the Camp. As the distance the crew flies to the Camp is slightly over 40 miles and the whole of the country between Kerema and the Camp is Mountainous it was seen that the walking distance to get in and out must be 80 miles.

The Patrol had crossed the Albert Range with the exception of the summit, by Mr Middleton, who crossed much further north where I intended to make an attempt to get over. The furthest point reached by any other Patrols from Kerema was the Village of BANGOVE on the slopes of the Alberts visited by Mr Healey but as to what lies between the Alberts and the Tauri Valley nothing was known.

In a Patrol I had made to the KUKUKUKU in February 1938 I had heard of a Trade Route to the Tauri Valley. This route passed through the Village of MOMO, near BANGOVE. As I had visited MOMO I knew that I would experience no real difficulty up to this spot unless I found the OHIKI River in flood. To overcome this difficulty if it should eventuate, a length of seizing wire and a coil of rope was taken with these I knew I could either bridge or raft a flooded river.

and myself spent the rest of the morning in preparing a raft...

Thursday 21st. July 1938.

At 11 a.m. we left Kerema with the Station Whaler and four large canoes. Our intention was to proceed as far as possible up the SORI River and then establish a Base Camp.

One third of the patrol stores and all but 70 of the free carriers were taken on this trip.

We proceeded up-stream for just over two and a half hours when I picked out a spot slightly up river from the old Rice Plantation, and there started to prepare a Base Camp.

This spot is the limit of navigability at low tide for the Whaler and large canoes.

The ground was cleared and the Officer's tent and fly and those for the Police and carriers erected. A store fly was also erected close to the Officer's quarters as there was much gear which could be spoiled by rain if not protected.

At 4.30 p.m. I left in the Whaler to return to the Station to attend to the moving of the rest of the stores and carriers and prisoners to the Base.

On arriving back at the Station at 6.45 p.m. I was informed by the R.M. that a rumour had come through to the effect that the Tauri Police Camp had been attacked by hostile natives and Mr P.O. Timperley and all his Police, prisoners and carriers killed.

As the story told by the KUKUKUSUS seemed to be fairly reliable, the R.M. had radioed His Excellency the Lieutenant Governor at Kairuku and informed him as to the position.

At 11 p.m. we were informed that a plane had been chartered to come to Kerema with extra Police and ammunition and was then to take Mr P.O. Toogood and myself to the upper Tauri River to try and see if there were any signs of life at the Police Camp.

Friday 22nd. July.

I arose at 4.30 a.m. and got the whaler off to the Base to bring Mr P.O. Toogood back to the station.

As soon as it was light the four canoes were sent off to the camp with another third of the stores and the rest of the carriers.

The whaler arrived back at the Station at 10.30 a.m. and Mr Toogood and myself spent the rest of the morning in preparing a wall

and a system of signals to be dropped on the camp if there were any signs of life to be seen.

The Stinson Seaplane arrived at 1.40 p.m. in the charge of Pilot Ken Garden and having on board Mr A.R.M. Healey and two A.Cs.

After conferring with the pilot and showing him all the maps we had of the Tauri River, we finally took off at 2.45. p.m. and laid a course for the old Aerodrome on the Tauri.

It was not long before we picked up the River and at once turned and started to fly up it.

The weather conditions were appalling as the cloud was down to within a few hundred feet of the ground and it was raining heavily.

Flying at 4000 ft. we were constantly dodging Mountain peaks which loomed up out of the cloud and rain. Owing to this we were forced to climb to 6000 ft. and so only caught occasional glimpses of the river below us.

About half way between KIENA and BOULDER Creeks we suddenly ran out of the rain and cloud and could see the whole of the valley lying below and in front of us.

The population here must be enormous as hundreds of villages could be seen at any one time. It must be remembered of course, that a KUKUKUKU village may only consist of one or two houses., but even then the population must run into many thousands if we allow an estimate of only three persons to a house.

The whole of this section of the valley is under intense cultivation and Mr Healey and myself noted one or two gardens that were at least three quarters of a mile across.

Large numbers of natives could be seen fleeing for the shelter of the bush as the plane passed over them.

On approaching Boulder Creek the population thinned out and between here and the Police Camp only a few villages were seen.

At 3.25 p.m. we sighted the Camp but to our despair we could see no people at all in the Camp, or in its vicinity.

The nosed of the plane was pointed straight for the camp houses and we roared over only one hundred or so feet up.

To our great relief Mr Timperley and two A.Cs. and a number of KUKUKUKU were seen on the Northern side of the buildings.

Quite a crowd of KUKUKUKUS was noticed digging post holes in the Camp but these fled as soon as the plane passed over.

We flew on up the valley for a short distance and then turned back to the camp, when the mail bag was thrown over.

Again we turned and passed over the Camp when we noted that all the Police, prisoners and carriers were present, and that Mr Timperley was running down the hill to retrieve the mail bag.

We continued on up the valley where we noted a number of very good sites for an Aerodrome within easy walking distance of the Tauri Police Camp. This time we stayed away much longer and then returned and passed over the Camp and saw Mr Timperley give us a signal that all was well. The trip back to Kerema was not eventful and except for the rain and cloud the flying conditions were fair.

I may mention here that at a spot about half way between Boulder and Kiema Creeks we noticed to the west of us a large water fall but were unable to fix its position exactly owing to the poor visibility.

We landed at Kerema after being away for 1 hour and forty five minutes. An unfortunate part of the flight was that we were unable to see any of the country to the west of the Tauri; a thing I was hoping to do as it might have helped us in our journey over the Alberts.

Saturday 23rd. July.

At 11 a.m. we got away in the whaler and the four canoes with the rest of the stores and the 74 prisoner carriers for the Base Camp on the Sori River.

After a long pull against the tide we reached the Base at 2.30 p.m. and after unloading the stores spent the rest of the afternoon extending the clearing and erecting more flies.

Sunday 24th. July.

Working at the Base all day packing up loads and preparing the gear ready for an early start on Tuesday morning.

Monday 25th. July.

In the early morning Mr P.O. Toogood returned to Kerema to do some adjustments on the R.M.s. Radio Transmitter.

The whole of the day was spent in weighing and tying up loads ready for the morning. Mr Toogood arrived back at 5 p.m.

Tuesday 26th. July.

By 5 a.m. the whole Camp was astir and just before 7 the first part of the relay was on its way.

A general northerly direction was taken and after crossing the Sori flats we commenced to climb a spur of the Ingraham Hills

This climb was an easy one and we arrived at the crest at a height of about 600 ft.

At the top of the hill one carrier, EKA-TIRIWA by name, had a fit on the track and I so relieved him of his load and after attending to him sent him back to the base to go in to Kerema.

We descended the spur on the North side and at a height of 200 ft came to a small creek flowing from the north and so followed it for a short distance when camp was made on a suitable spot.

The carriers were at once sent back for the second load.

Mr P.O. Tocgood arrived in Camp at noon and said that he was suffering great pain from what appeared to be a blind boil under his right arm. By 3.30 p.m. the last load was in and we set about completing the Camp.

At 6.10 p.m. we had a radio conversation with the R.M.G.D. and reported our position. We were informed that an A.C. and one prisoner was leaving Kerema in the morning to bring up a mail which had arrived on the Chinsurah from Port Moresby.

Wednesday 27th. July.

By 7 a.m. we were on the move again following up the bed of the creek across flat country for quite a distance until we came to another hill. This hill went almost straight up for 900 ft. and the track was very difficult indeed. On cresting the hill we went straight down to another creek and after following it to the west for a short distance

we made camp. The distance made was not all I had wished for but the nature of the track led me to believe that it would take the carriers all day to get the gear over from Camp 2. to this Camp 3.

At 1.00 p.m. the A.C. from Kerema arrived with the mail and after a meal he was at once sent back to Kerema.

Owing to the bad climb it was not possible to get all the gear over before dark and L/C AMORI and 3 A.Cs. were left in charge of what was left until we should send for it in the morning.

At 5 p.m. Mr P.O. Toogood's arm was paining him so much that he Radioed Moresby on the emergency band and got in touch with the Doctor.

After giving his symptoms he was told to get in to Port as soon as possible for Medical attention.

At 6.10 p.m. Kerema was called and after giving the R.M. our position he was informed of the position.

The R.M. at once told Mr P.O. Toogood to proceed to Kerema and informed me that he would send Sergeant MODOI and Corporal AGOTI up to me in the morning to help with the work now that Mr Toogood would not be with the Patrol..

It is now going to be a very difficult job to get in to the Police Camp as a Patrol of this size and with the distance which has to be covered calls for at least two white officers. But it can not be helped so we will have to carry on and do all we can. This loss of Mr Toogood doubles my work as I will now have to try and be in two places at once. We can but do our best.

Thursday 28th. July.

Mr P.O. Toogood left at 7 a.m. with all the carriers for Camp 2 and from there proceeded in to Kerema. He took with him 33 carriers to carry all his stores and gear.

The rest of the Patrol gear with the Police and carriers arrived in camp at 1 p.m. and after counting loads and carriers I found that owing to the loss of the 33 carriers I would be forced to Triple lay the stores for a number of days.

On being told this the Police and carriers groaned in disgust as this meant that they would have to cover the same ground five times in the one day. if there is anything that takes the heart out of the carriers it is the constant tramping backwards and forwards a number of times between any two camps.

On calling the roll I found that a prisoner carrier, PARAUWA, had deserted and had evidently mingled with Mr Toogood's carriers and had gone in to Kerema.

The fact that we will now have to relay our stores and gear three times instead of twice is going to greatly increase the time it will take to get in to the Police Camp.

At 3 p.m. Sergeant Medoi and Corporal AGOTI arrived from Kerema to help me in the handling of the Patrol through to the Police Camp or for as long as I would require their services. I think that I forgot to mention that included in the Patrol were C.I. MIRIA and N.M.A. KARAHO. As MIRIA can read and write English he will be a great help now that Mr Toogood is gone.

During the evening over an hour was spent in attending to minor cuts and bruises amongst the carriers.

Friday 29th. July.

On calling the Roll at 5.30 a.m. I found that two Biaru carriers had deserted in the night. These boys were NAVAKI-OAIVE and NARI-IVARAPAU. As a search for them would have been useless I did not bother to send the Police away after them. The Sergeant and a few carriers were sent back to bring up the gear which had been left in Camp 2. whilst I with the rest of the carriers went on up the creek with all the loads of tinned rice to establish Camp 3.

A direction slightly west of north was travelled and our path led us along the bed of the creek which flowed past Camp 3. After travelling a distance of approximately 2½ miles on the map. I made camp on the site of an old garden called PI'AI'IA and not far from the KAVEROPE village of UMGHOI'IBS.

Here I dumped all the rice and left the Lance Corporal and three A.Cs. in charge of it whilst I took all the carriers back to Camp 3. where I arrived at 1.30 p.m.

Soon after my arrival V.C. PUPU of AI'IU'IU and nine KUKUKUKU men and three women came into Camp.

Two of the men, namely KEKEA and SAI'E, volunteered to show us the way to the Tauri Police Camp., and I told them that if they would show us the best and shortest route I would reward them well.

KEKEA told me that he had heard that the KOVE (evidently the same as WAMAI'IA) people had killed two A.Cs. at the Tauri Camp because A.C. IADAMA had killed one of them when on Patrol with Mr Timperley and Mr Carey. He also said that these people had sent word that they would fight when A.C. IADAMA came back as they "knew his face".

I did not take too much notice of this talk as the KUKUKUKUS are known

to be notorious liars.

Whilst I was talking with these people the Sergeant and his carriers arrived back and after a rest all the carriers were sent off with another load to Camp 4.

Saturday 30th. July.

By 6.30 a.m. the flies were all down and the first load of the day was on its way along the creek to Camp 4. This creek which is called URAI'IA is the only possible route between the two Camps as the hills tower up almost sheer to about 500 ft. on either side.

By 10 a.m. this load was in camp and the boys were sent back for the rest of the gear.

At noon a few natives from UMGOI'IBO village came in with a little food which I purchased with beads.

Among these people were two women whom I had seen on my last patrol into this country in February. One was the widow of AVOKU who was killed by OBEGA of BELAGAI in the bush near to KEKIAWA.

This old woman is called DIAJAVAGAU and is known to the Police as the old woman who "talk talk all the time".

Great laughter was caused when she stated that now she was not encumbered with a husband she thought that she would marry A.C. BERI. This A.C. is already married to a KUKUKUKU woman and his protest on hearing the proposal was loud and long. Evidently one was enough for BERI.

The last of the gear was in Camp by 3 p.m. and then the work of getting all the flies up and the camp in order was started.

At this stage of the Patrol all are in good health except for three carriers who have sore feet caused by kicking their toes against roots.

Camp 4. 600 ft.

Sunday 31st. July.

Camp was broken very early and our track led us across PI'AI'IA Ck. soon after leaving the camp and then up a hill to the north. We climbed to an elevation of 1500 ft. and then started to descend in the bed of another small creek called ARAIIA. I was told that this creek flowed into the Lohiki River. Today only about a mile on the map was covered before we made camp in the creek before mentioned.

Here I established Camp 5. at 1100 ft.

The carriers were sent back to Camp 4 for another load at 10 a.m.

When these carriers arrived back they had with them C.I.MIRIA who informed me that seven carriers had deserted from Camp 4. when they were supposed to be tying up their loads.

On calling the roll I discovered that four free carriers and three prisoner carriers had deserted.

These were carriers ERAVIDI-NERATAI , BITIAKOA-ORARE, SEFO-KAROARE, NAIEKA-NOAROA and prisoners OAFEREAPO, EURA, EVERAVIKIA.

These natives were pursued by the police but managed to make their escape into the dense scrub.

It is worthy of note that all these natives belong to the KARAMA District.

When it was too dark to do any further work I found that there were still 32 loads to be brought over from Camp 4.

Monday 1st. August.

As soon as it was light enough to see the track some of the carriers were sent back with the Sergeant to Camp 4 to get the loads left behind whilst I with the rest of the carriers went down the creek. This creek led us to the north and after a very rough trip for about a mile and a half we arrived at a fairly large stream flowing to the west. We were told that this was called the HAUWEIA and was one of the arms of the Lohiki River. We crossed this stream and established Camp 6. on the opposite bank.

By the time all the carriers had come in we had nearly half the gear in this Camp.

It was while we were clearing the Camp area that we discovered a KUKUKUKU man and woman hiding in the scrub and after they had been calmed down they told us that they had heard that we were coming and that all the people had left their villages and gone to hide in the bush.

They knew all about where we were going and said that we would find trouble with the tribes to the north east of the Albert Mountains. Before they left they promised to come back with food for us to buy. I want to buy as much food as I can because with the Patrol crippled the way it is by the loss of so many carriers, I am unable to cover the ground as fast as I estimated before I left Kerema.

During the afternoon I left Camp 6 and went back to Camp 5 to sleep and be ready to bring down the rest of the gear in the early morning.

Another point that decided me to sleep in Camp 5 was that to desert the carriers would have to go past my tent and I am a very light sleeper when in the bush.

Camp 6. 600 ft.

Tuesday 2nd. August.

During the night I was called by N.M.A.KARAO to have a look at a carrier called NARAHOU-HIRAI and found that he was apparently suffering from Pleurisy. He was treated and for the rest of the night we sat up with him. In the morning this boy was much better and was carried down to Camp 6.

An early start was made and by 2 p.m. all gear was in Camp 6.

When issuing the rations I found that 2/80 lb. bags of sago were rotten. We had brought 40 of these bags with us on the Patrol but were forced to carry them without covers as there is a shortage of these articles at Kerema.

Nine KUKUKUKUS from the village of NIVU came into the camp during the late afternoon and sold us about 80 lbs. of food.

So far on this patrol very little food has been purchased and I think that the people are avoiding us as much as possible. This can perhaps be explained by the rumour that the Police Camp had been attacked and they are avoiding us because they think that we might be after the persons who spread the lying report.

Wednesday 3rd. August.

An early start and we commenced climbing the hill to the north of the camp. This was a very bad and slippery climb to a height of 2000 ft. On the way up we passed through the villages of DEBAGU and AGWAI'IA but found them to be deserted.

Camp 7 was made on the top of the ridge and the carriers were sent off for more gear. I made the camp on this ridge as it would have been too long a stage to go on down to the Lohiki River.

By dark there was still a fair amount of gear left in Camp 6 so the bulk of the boys were sent back in the charge of the Sergeant to bring it up in the early morning. Seven A.Cs. also accompanied the party.

Kerema can be seen from this ridge on a bearing of 180 degrees.

A very cold and wet night.

A

Camp 7. 2000 ft.

Thursday 4th. August.

By 10 a.m. the Sergeant had got all the gear up from Camp 6 and I was ready to move on again.

Whilst I was waiting for him to arrive I had the ridge cleared of timber and I could see that we ought to be able to get to the village of ex A.C. BENARI in from 3½ to 4 days. I could also see that the main Lohiki River did not have its source to the East but flowed down through a break in the Albert Mountains to the North. It is evident that this stream comes from somewhere behind the Alberts.

At 11 a.m. I started off with the loads of rice and travelled in a generally N.N.W. direction along the ridge. It was not long before I started to descend and at last we came out on the banks of the Lohiki or IAVI River as it is called by the KUKUKUKUS.

The stream here is about 50 yards wide and fortunately we were able to ford it on an outcrop of stone.

Camp was made on the opposite bank and at a point about 150 ft. above the river. The elevation of the camp here is 900 ft.

The track between Camps 7 and 8 is bad in the sense that there is a very difficult climb out of the river to the top of the ridge.

All the carriers were sent back to camp 7 to bring the rest of the gear along in the morning whilst I remained in Camp 8 with four A.Cs.

Friday 5th. August.

Nearly all day was spent in getting the rest of the gear down the steep hill from Camp 7.

Some time during last night 12 carriers deserted and before leaving stole 12 tins of meat and fish and one 40 lb. bag of dry sago. These boys were:- Carriers ERA-AUKA, VITIAUAPU-TORA, MIHA-PAUVIKIA, TIAPO-ORI, OERE)OAIOVO, EVAREA-BEAPI, BEHEA-BIKIATORO, POVARU-NOVAKA, NOVIRD-IOMURE, WAIKAO-NAVAI. and prisoners HAVAKARI and BIKIAHOUA.

Today quite a number of carriers reported sick and one or two showed symptoms of dysentery. As all of the carriers had been recruited from the districts to the East of Kerema and as there had been cases of dysentery in the Base Camp of Gil Search Ltd. I was afraid that they had picked up the disease there. All the sick boys were at once isolated and A.Cs. UFA, JIKI and AU'U were told to be prepared to move off for Kerema with the sick natives first thing in the morning.

A light party should be able to reach the Base on the Sori River in a

day and a half from this Camp. The signs of dysentery have got me worried as a serious outbreak of this disease on a patrol would be fatal as we have not the facilities for treating the sick.

Any boy feeling in any way ill was ordered to report to me at once so that I could see if he too had contracted the disease.

I knew that this would lead to a lot of malingering on the part of the carriers but this could not be helped as it would be fatal to neglect even the faintest sign of the disease in any one boy.

The evening was spent in writing mail to be despatched to the R.M.G. D.
Saturday 6th. August.

At 6 a.m. the three A.Cs. and the six sick carriers we started off for Kerema.

As soon as these boys were clear of the Camp the rest of the party moved off to the N.N.E. along a track which led us up the ridge from the Lohiki River. We passed through an old abandoned garden and then made our way down to a creek called WI'IU'IA which flowed into the Lohiki. This creek was followed for a short distance until the huge boulders and almost sheer cliffs on either side made the route almost impossible for loaded boys.

The carriers were then told to stop in the creek bed whilst I and two A.C. clambered up the cliffs to see if we could find a route to the top and a possible camping place. At last a camping spot was found and a difficult but climbable way up discovered at the end of a near-by ridge.

Two shots were fired as a signal to the rest of the A.Cs. and carriers to come up and by 11.30 a.m. all of this load was in Camp 9.

The elevation of this camp is 1000ft.

The carriers after a short rest were sent back to Camp 8 to get more of the gear and by 4 p.m. all of the patrol gear was in Camp 9.

No more cases of sickness were reported.

Sunday 7th. August.

Camp was broken early and we at once started climbing a long spur to the village of NIVU. This village was reached at 10 a.m. and on approaching it we commenced to call. We were at once answered by cries of "Govani Moki kao" (Government do not come here). We replied that we were coming up to the village and advanced but on arriving in the village found that all the people had fled into the bush.

Our Camp 10 was made on an old deserted village site above NIVU.

This camp is on the top of a ridge which runs parallel with the Albert Mountains and is at an elevation of 2400 ft. From here a glorious view can be obtained of the Ranges and foot-hills.

The village of BENARI can be seen on another ridge to the North of us and I estimate that we ought to be able to reach there tomorrow.

The carriers arrived in Camp with the last of the gear at 4 p.m. and we set about making as comfortable a camp as the limited space allowed.

During the afternoon the old woman DIAJAVAGAU came to the camp with a few other KUKUKUKUS and about 300 lbs of food was purchased.

This woman commences to talk the moment she arrives in the camp and goes on talking the whole time she is there.

A very cold and wet night was spent on this open ridge and we were all glad when dawn came.

Monday 8th. August.

We left Camp 10 at an early hour and by 10 a.m. were approaching IOWAI which is the proper name for the village of Ex. A.C. BENARI.

As we drew near the village we noted that a group of KUKUKUKUS were on the top of the peak near one of the houses.

As soon as they saw us they called to us to go back and then commenced dancing about the peak and waving their bows and arrows and smacking themselves on the buttocks. This is usually taken as a sign that they want to fight. We called to them that we wanted to come up and then A.Cs. IRIRI, BERI and myself started slowly up the track. When we got within 50 or 60 yards of the village the group of natives drew back and then as we approached they retreated down the other side of the ridge. When we reached the top they were nowhere to be seen and it was only after a lot of shouting that a young boy came out of the bush and came to us. He was told to go back and tell the rest of his people to come in as we wanted to make friends with them.

A little later Ex. A.C. BENARI and six other KUKUKUKUS walked in, unarmed and it was not long before the whole party was laughing and talking. BENARI was told that he was no longer wanted by the Government and that he was to go in to Kerema to get some of his gear which he had left there when he deserted.

I then told him that I was going to make a Base Camp near to his Village and leave two A.Cs. and some gear there whilst I went on to the Tauri. He then told me that as far as he was concerned the village was mine

and that I could do as I wished with it. Then, he leading the way showed us a good camping site close to the village and then rushed to tell his women to collect food to trade with us.

I established Camp II at 2200 ft. on the ridge below the village and then the carriers were sent back for the rest of the gear.

All the loads were in by 4 p.m. and I at once commenced re-tying and packing stores. It is my intention to leave A. Cs. MIRO and WAINO here with a dump of 1000 lbs of rice to enable me to get back to Kerema.

In the evening the Sergeant reported that he was suffering from stomach trouble. To my relief I found that it was not dysentery but some form of acute constipation which did not respond to either salts or quinine and rhubarb pills. I think that it would be as well to send him back to Kerema with the next lot of returning carriers.

Tuesday 9th. August.

The whole day was spent in camp sorting out stores and making up loads. As 31 carriers and 2 prisoners were not well enough to go on over the Alberts and as this is the last place I can safely send anybody back from I told these boys and the Sergeant to be ready to start off for Kerema in the morning.

Out of this lot of carriers, one seems to have all the signs of dysentery and two are suffering from kidney trouble as they are passing blood with their urine.

About 200 lbs of food was purchased with beads and also a small pig.

In the evening I wrote to the R.M.G.D. informing him of the position but assured him that I would carry on as I knew that the Tauri Polive Camp must be almost out of food.

Raining and very cold all day.

Wednesday 10th. August.

The Sergeant and the boys to go in to Kerema were got away at 6 a.m. and then we started off for KNGE Creek which flowed at the foot of the ridge to the north of Camp II.

About a quarter of a mile from the Camp one of the carriers took a fit on the track and after I had attended to him I sent him along to catch up with the Sergeant's party and go in to Kerema.

The track led down the ridge and then disappeared over an almost sheer cliff about fifty feet in height. All the gear had to be lowered down this cliff and in doing this quite a lot of valuable time was lost.

Camp 12 was established on the banks of WENGE Creek and then the carriers were sent back to Camp 11 to bring down the rest of the gear.

This camp is at an elevation of 1700 ft. and is at the foot of a spur running up to the top of the Albert Mountains.

During the afternoon a KUKUKUKU man came into the camp and told me that he knew the track over to the Tauri Police Camp but that he was frightened to come over with us as he said the natives on the other side would kill him. Nothing I could say would make him change his mind and come with us. He said that the Range in front of us was the last one we would have to cross. After crossing the Alberts we were to follow up a stream called the WENA and then get on to the top of a ridge, which, he said, would lead us direct to the Police Camp. I hope what he says is true as the carriers are all grumbling about the continual climbing which we are forced to do.

Thursday 11th. August.

Camp was broken very early and as soon as it was light enough to see the track we started off. Our route led us along WENGE Creek for a short distance and then we commenced climbing the spur leading to the top of the Alberts. After going a short distance up this spur I crossed a track used by myself and party last February when on my way to AMOWO.

Leaving this track we continued on to the north, climbing all the time until at 10 a.m. I was forced to make Camp so that the rest of the gear could come up in the one day.

This was my Camp 13 and as after events will show it certainly lived up to its number. By 3.30 p.m. all the gear and carriers were in Camp.

This is the coldest camp we have had on the whole trip so far. It was so cold that I had a fire lit in the front of my tent and spent most of my time crouched over it trying to get warm.

Friday 12th. August.

We left Camp 13 as soon as it was light enough to see and then continued on up the ridge. On this part of the track the grade was not too bad but when we reached a spot about 1000 ft below the crest of the Mountain we were confronted by a sheer face of rock rising up about 15 ft.

Here I had ladders made and all the gear was then carried to the top.

We went on and skirted an old landslide and then were faced by another sheer cliff but this time it was about treble the height.

Together with A.Cs. IRIRI and BERI I scaled this cliff by the aid of the many roots and crevices and at last we stood on the top of the Alberts.

This was all very well but all the gear was down below and I could find no possible way of getting it up.

We walked along the top of the range towards the East for a distance of about half a mile but could find no possible way up.

The only thing left to do now was to return to the carriers and make another attempt slightly further to the west where I had noticed the range was not quite so high. The elevation of the Alberts at the spot where I climbed it was 3000 ft.

On descending to the carriers we at once started to make our way along to the west keeping as high as we could and just under the crest of the range.

No way up was found and at last I was forced to descend to the village of BANGOVE and there make camp 14 at 3200 ft.

A large number of KUKUKUKUS came into the camp during the late afternoon and 900 lbs of food was purchased.

The Corporal and six A. Cs. were left for the night in Camp 13. to guard the dump of rice etc. and see that it was brought over to Camp 14 as early as possible on the morrow.

This is a great disappointment as I want to get to the Police Camp as soon as possible as things up there must be getting very serious by this time.

In the early morning I intend to start off with one or two A. Cs. and try to find a route over the range to the North of BANGOVE.

Saturday 13th. August.

In the early hours of the morning all the carriers were sent back to Camp 13 to bring up the rest of the gear and while they were away I scouted about for a suitable track over the range. Much to my relief I found one leading up a spur behind the camp. This track was rough and very steep but I was certain that we could get the gear over it with a lot of hard work.

At 10 a.m. the carriers returned back with the rest of the gear and at 11.45 a.m. I started off with all the loads of rice and my personal gear to make an attempt to get over the range and make a camp on the other side. We managed to get over without too much trouble and then descended into a valley on the other side. Much to my surprise I found a large stream flowing towards the South East and on asking its name was told it was the Lohiki. This is evidently the bend I made reference to previously.

The elevation of the river bed here is 3300 ft so I am of the Opinion that there must be a large waterfall further to the east where the river breaks through the gap in the Alberts. I hope some day to be able to verify this.

We made our Camp 15 on the opposite bank of the stream and whilst we were doing this a large crowd of KUKUKUKUS came in and said that they were from a village called WANGAIWU in the Tauri Valley.

It was evident that they did not wish us to go any further as when we asked them how long it would take us to get to the Tauri Police Camp they looked at our gear and then started counting on their fingers and toes until they had reached a total of thirty "sleeps" before we would get there. A little food was purchased from these natives and then all the carriers were sent back to Camp 14 to be ready to bring over the rest of the gear in the morning. I remained in Camp 15 with 4 A.Cs.

A guard was placed at night for the first time on the Patrol and from now on I will have one every night as these people are not familiar with the Government.

It was here that a very laughable incident occurred. Whilst a large crowd of natives were following my movements I had a wash and then took out my dental plate to clean it. One old man gaped in amazement and then fainted whilst the rest of the natives fled into the bush. They returned but could not be persuaded to approach too close to me and from then on I was regarded with some awe. Soon before dark they slipped off into the bush and we saw no more of them. Evidently removeable teeth were a bit too much for them.

Sunday 14th. August.

It took almost all day to get the rest of the gear over from Camp 14 to this camp.

In the early afternoon I climbed the Range behind and to the North of the Camp and finally reached a village called BOBOBUNGA at 5500 ft. From here I could see the course of the Lohiki and on turning and looking to the North I could see that our troubles were far from over as there was range after range to be crossed. There is one peak towering up to almost 7000 ft. and I believe that the track goes either over or round this peak.

On returning to the Camp at 4.30 p.m. I found that 5 A.Cs. and six prisoners had arrived from Kerema with a mail.

On opening and reading the mail I found to my dismay that all but 14 of the prisoner Carriers were to be returned to Kerema at once as they were nearly sentence expired.

There was also an instruction that the Tauri Police Camp was to be abandoned and that Mr P.O. Timperley was to return to Kerema as soon as possible.

I at once wrote to the R.M.G.D. as follows:-

" I will send to Kerema tomorrow the prisoners C.2 . 23. 24. 26. 27/ 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. and right down to 75. in the care of A.Cs. SIMBARI, AU'U and JIKI.
The loss of these carriers reduces my total now to 86 (inclusive of the six carrier prisoners from Kerema).
The following is a list of the gear to be moved on from here with the 86 carriers.

130/40 lb. tins of rice, w/meal, sugar and salt.	130	boys.
42 loads cases etc. (80 lb. loads).	84	"
2/70 lb. bags of sugar.	4	"
10/40 lb. bags sago.	10	"
1 bag axes and knives.	2	"
11 flies.	11	"
Gear F.A.B. inclusive of tent and fly.	16	"
	<u>Total</u>	<u>257</u> boys.

It can be seen from this that to get all the gear up to the Tauri Police Camp I could just do it by triple laying; but I estimate that it will take from 12 to 14 days at the very least. to get from here to the T.P.C. doing that.

Owing to the terribly rough nature of the country; which I may say is a series of ranges of approximately 8000 ft. in altitude, it would take, by triple laying stores, say, 4 days to Timperley's Camp 18 and from there to the T.P.C. we know it took Timperley 11 1/2 days to reach the Camp.

If I could reach the Camp by the 29th August with all the gear Timperley could be in Kerema by the 10th. or 11th. September. This would be what you require, but, as you say in your Minute the free carriers are not eligible to carry after the 22nd. of this month. If I took all the gear to the T.P.C. and stayed there with all the prisoner carriers not time expired whilst Timperley came out with the free carriers, I would not have enough carriers to get out when my time came, without abandoning an enormous quantity of gear. By this the Sergeant will have reached you and you will be aware of the number of carriers I have left.

I have considered the question and I hope that you will approve of what I am going to do.

Tomorrow I will send the nearly sentence expired prisoners back and give them 400 lbs of rice and as much of the gear for the T.P.C. as they can conveniently carry, (meat, kerosene, fish, nails etc.) a list of which I will furnish separately.

This will leave me here 120 tins of rice etc. and 10 bags of sago.

I will make a temporary base here and leave three A.Cs. in charge with 2 tins of rice and 1 bag of sago as food until my return.

This brings the total now to 118 tins of rice and 9 bags of sago.

I will leave here with 60 tins of rice plus my gear, a little trade, the flies and the knives and axes.

This will leave here 48 tins of rice etc. and 9 bags of sago as well as a lot of cased gear.

Travelling light I ought to be able to get to the Tauri Police Camp in 7 days, stay there 2 days and return in 7 days with Timperley and all his gear and boys. This makes 16 days I should be away from here and the 60 tins of rice should just last 16 days with what I can trade in food to allow for Timperley's boys on the way back.

On arriving back here the rest of the gear could be picked up and relayed to ENGE where I have a dump of 25 tins of rice. This then could be picked up and brought to Kerema, by relaying, where we should arrive about the 14th. or 15th. of September, with I hope. not having to abandon any gear. "

The rest of the afternoon and evening was spent in sorting gear to be sent back to Kerema in the morning and gear that was to be left in the camp and also the gear which I would require to go on with me.

Monday 15th. August.

In the early hours of the morning A. Cs. JIKI, AU'U and SIMBARI and the 47 prisoners were got away for Kerema.

Corporal AGOTI and A. Cs. UFA and JAMBO were instructed to stay in the camp to look after all the gear whilst I and the rest of the Police with all the carriers were to attempt to get to the Police Camp.

At 11.45 a.m. I started off and we climbed up the range to the Point where I had turned round yesterday.

On leaving this place our track led us along a razor-back ridge in the direction of the high peak.

The track skirted around the foot of this peak and then dropped down behind it and into a village DABAUMGA. Here three natives were seen but they would have nothing to do with us and fled into the bush when we called to them to come to us.

On leaving this village we descended to a creek and then followed around the side of a steep hill for over half a mile.

At last the track turned and went straight up the hill. We climbed for almost an hour and then at an elevation of 5200 ft. we found ourselves on the top of the divide between the Lohiki and the Tauri Rivers. We could see nothing owing to the thick scrub but the A. Cs. who had accompanied Mr Timperley on the Tauri Patrol No. 8. recognised the cold dry wind which blows down the Tauri Valley almost all the time.

We followed the ridge along to the north for a short distance and at last came to a place where the KUKUKUKUS had cleared the ridge of timber. From here we could see that we had one more range to cross before we should arrive in the Tauri Valley proper. whilst just below us was a village which we were told was WANGAIWU.

We descended along a spur to the village, which we found to be deserted, and there made camp at 4.30 p.m. The elevation at this point was found to be 4800 ft. Camp 16.

Tuesday 16th. August.

On leaving WAMGAIWU we went down the ridge to the valley and then ridge after small ridge was crossed until at last we came to a fairly large stream which we were told was called the WENA. This is, in my opinion the head waters of the KIENA creek. Later I was able to verify this from the KUKUKUKUS.

Just before reaching this stream we found our track barred by 10 or 12 natives, all armed, who called to us to go back. After a lot of talk they withdrew into the bush and the party went on.

When L/C. Sagoi, who was bringing up on the tail of the line arrived at this spot the natives again appeared and barred his way.

One of the party fitted an arrow to his bow string and aimed it at SAGOI. At this point SAGOI fired one shot in the air over their heads and the whole party took fright and ran off into the bush.

This incident took place in the vicinity of a village called NEGAINI and I noted that this village had a large Palisade built across the only approach to it. It is evident that these people are more war-like than the people on the south side of the Alberts.

Camp was made at 4.30 p.m. on the banks of WENA Creek and at a spot called WANDUI. The elevation at this point was found to be 4000 ft.

A few natives came in to the Camp 17 and a little food was purchased from them. Much to my dismay they told me that they had heard that Mr Timperley had run out of food at the Police Camp and was on his way out to the coast. This of course, may only be a rumour but in case it is true I intend on the morrow to strike across for Timperley's Camp, 18 so that if he is coming out I will be able to intercept him.

Wednesday 17th. August.

A very cold night. None of the party slept much and even I with three blankets was forced to get up and crouch over a fire to keep from shivering. An early start was made and we followed along the valley of the WENA for about four miles before we came to the ridge we would have to climb to get to the Tauri.

This valley is almost level and is at an elevation of 4000 ft. and is thickly populated but all the villages we saw were deserted.

On leaving the WENA we climbed the ridge to the north west of us and at an elevation of 4600 ft. found ourselves looking down into the Tauri valley near to the village of IOBI.

We descended to this village and then went on down to Timperley's Camp 16. No people were seen in IOBI and as it was still fairly early in the day we decided to follow along the track and camp in Timperley's camp 17.

This camp was reached at 4.30 p.m. and we found all the poles etc. for the flies intact.

Camp was made here on the extensive grass flat and we settled down to rest for the night as I wished to make an early start and try to reach Boulder Creek the next day.

At about 8 p.m. I was asleep on my bed sleeve when one of the poles supporting it snapped and I was thrown to the ground. Unfortunately I fell on my back across a log half buried in the ground. I thought for a moment that I had broken my back but by the time the boys heard my calls I was able to move.

My bed was repaired and I was helped to it and lay down. My back was paining me greatly and I feared that I was suffering from some internal rupture as during the night I was passing a little blood with my urine. In the morning I was a little better and so decided to move on as best I could.

Thursday 16th. August.

We got away fairly early and followed along the track through Camp 18 and then on through 19 and 20. By this time I was feeling the strain of climbing the numerous small hills and when we got in to Camp 20 I collapsed on the track. This camp is a fair distance from water so as soon as the carriers had all arrived, I sent a few A.Cs. ahead to make a camp on the creek which flowed at the foot of the hill and then had four boys carry me down the hill to this camp.

Apart from my indisposition the day was uneventful. I had made up my mind that I would go on to the Tauri Police Camp even if I had to be carried all the way as I knew Timperley would be anxiously awaiting us.

A very trying night was spent by myself and I could see the Police and carriers were wondering how they were going to get along with a sick man to look after.

Friday 19th. August.

We did not leave camp until well after 7 a.m. and then followed along the track through Camps 21 and 22. and then went down the long hill to Boulder Creek. It was 4 p.m. when we arrived at Camp 23. and I at once tried to find the tin of rice buried by Mr Timperley on his way in. After a lot of digging I located it but the KUKUKUS had been in to the camp and had broken open the tin and poured the rice into the hole and just left it.

An uneventful day and no natives were seen. All the villages I passed through were deserted. These natives seem to be deliberately avoiding contact with the party.

Saturday 20th. August.

Camp was broken at 7 a.m. and the long climb up to Camp 24 started. The track lies along the crest of the spur which rises in a series of terraces to the village of DIAGWA'AUA near to the camp.

I was assisted up this hill by holding on to the two prongs of a forked stick whilst two boys walked in front and pulled.

On approaching the village all the male population (about 15) turned out fully armed and barred the track and told us to go back the way we had come. Nearly all these natives had arrows fitted to their bow strings and for a while things looked serious.

A.C. IRIRI and myself advanced steadily towards the natives calling to them not to go away but when we were nearly in bowshot they turned and ran for the bush. I think now that they only meant to cover the flight of their women who were running in all directions in the garden below the village. The whole party passed through this village without any further trouble and by 1 p.m. we were in Camp 25.

On leaving this camp the track led round the side of the hill for quite a distance and then we dropped down into Camp 26.

From this point the Police Camp can be seen and I had three rifles fired at once to see if my signal could be heard. No reply was heard from the Camp so I set fire to an old Shelter that happened to be near the Camp. It was evident that this signal was seen as mirrors flashed a reply from the Camp. Much to our disgust rain began to fall and the Camp was soon blotted out from our sight.

On going down the Hill a little we found that the natives had dug up

the body of the carrier who had died when Mr Toogood was on his way out to the coast from the Police Camp.

We re-buried the body as best we could and then went on down the hill and made camp between Timperley's camps 26 and 27.

We ought to be able to get to the Police Camp tomorrow if I do not get any worse and have to stop in Camp.

Sunday 21st. August.

We left the camp at an early hour and descended to camp 27. where we flashed mirrors at the Police Camp and received a reply.

After leaving camp 27 we went on down the hill and into the tharub and then on to Camp 28.

Soon after leaving Camp 28 I was met on the track by three A.Cs. from the Police Camp with a note from Mr P.O. Timperley saying that he had sent boys to repair the bridge over the Tauri River and would I hurry up and get to the camp with some tea as he had been out of food for a month.

The river was crossed on the repaired bridge and we climbed the hill to camp 29. and soon after leaving this camp were met by Mr Timperley who looked very fit and well after his long period living on rice and vegetables. Mr Timperley informed me that he had 800 lbs of rice left and that if I had not have turned up by the end of the month he would have left then for the coast. I arrived at the Camp at 1.15 p.m. and the carriers were all in by 2 p.m.

The rest of the day was spent in handing over mail etc. to Mr Timperley.

Monday 22nd. August to Wednesday 24th. August.

In the Tauri Police Camp resting and preparing to leave for the coast on Thursday 25th.

On Monday Mr Timperley carried out a short Patrol to the villages lying to the West of the Camp.

My back is still giving me trouble and I am afraid that I might have to be carried out.

Quite a large number of natives visited the camp as they had seen the Patrol arrive and knew that we would have plenty of trade with us.

A fair quantity of vegetables and two pigs were purchased and given to the Police and carriers.

Thursday 25th. August.

The departure from the Fauri Police Camp was made at 7 a.m. and the party consisted of Mt P.O. Timperley and myself, L/C. SAGOI, A.Cs. TURIAI, SEJUNA, KAVARI, BSEFA, BOBI, IADANA, SABEO, ABANA, IUMA, KEKERE, KUWE, MANAI, BERI, KADA, AU'U, DOMAMASI and IRIRI. and C.I. MIRJA and N.M.A. KARAHU, together with 90 odd carriers.

About two miles below the Camp we crossed the river and then continued on and crossed two large streams called respectively the WHUENA and the SUI'IA.

Soon after we crossed the SUI'IA Creek I decided to make camp as I was not feeling too well. This Camp was made at a point just below the Camp 26. of the Fauri Patrol No. 2.

Soon after the camp was made rain commenced to fall and continued almost all night.

Friday 26th. August.

An early start was made and we commenced to climb the hill called YENANGABA to Camp 26. After about two hours of a stiff climb we reached the Camp and then continued on to the top of the hill which we reached at an elevation of 3400 ft.

From here we continued on along the "razor back" ridge until we arrived at Camp 25.

From Camp 25 we dropped a little and soon arrived in the village of AMAMIO which we found to be abandoned. One man was seen in the garden but he fled as soon as he saw us.

From Camp 24 at AMAMIO we commenced the long descent to Camp 23 on the bank of UNGOIWENA or BOULDER Creek. The elevation of this Camp is 2600 ft. It commenced to rain again in the early evening.

Saturday 27th. August.

An early start was made and we crossed the creek and commenced to climb the hill called GUM'IURUNGA to Camp 22. On this section of the trip I was too ill to walk and was carried most of the way.

An entirely uneventful day and no natives were seen. Camp was made between Camps 20 and 21 of the Fauri Patrol No. 2.

Some little time was lost in trying to locate Mr Timperley's revolver which had fallen from the holster.

During the evening we were visited by some people from HAGAVIA and a pig was purchased from them.

Sunday 28th. August.

We broke camp early and after passing through Camp 20 and 19 we descended into the IOBI Basin and then passed through the villages of IWALBU. ADEI'IA'AWAUA. FAI'IKA. AGWANDABA. IBOIBOIGIA. GWIARIBUNGA. we finally arrived at Camp 16 of the Tauri Patrol No. 2.

We made Camp here so as to be ready to start over to the WENA Valley in the morning.

During the late afternoon a woman called ANGU, who said she was the sister of Ex. A.C.UVC, came into the Camp and told us to travel to the coast by the Tauri Patrol No.2. track as the natives in the WENA Valley were preparing to attack the party.

She said that the talk about this attack was the reason why we had found all the villages deserted.

ANGU promised us that as we were going in to the WENA Valley she would provide us with guides as far as WANGAIWU.

During the evening I had another bad attack and so did not get too much sleep.

Monday 29th. August.

Shortly after dawn our three guides appeared and we commenced the climb to the top of the western wall of the IOBI Basin, called by the natives SIAUWI. We reached the top at an elevation of 4600 ft. and then travelled along the top skirting the highest point which is known as NAGAVIA. From this point we commenced our descent into the WENA Valley.

When we reached the WENA Creek the guides were anxious to leave my track and keep to the hills to the west. I did not wish to do this as I knew that for a great distance my track could not be bettered.

By 11.30 a.m. we had reached my Camp 15. on the junction of the WENA and the WANDUIA Creeks. Here the guides wished to turn back and refused to go on until ANGU appeared and said that she had followed the party as she had fears for its safety. She talked with the guides and in the end both she and the guides said that they would go on with us.

We left Camp 17 and climbed to the top of UDIDUNGA 4750 ft. where ANGU left the party.

Whilst passing a village called WAGWI we noted that the guides appeared to be frightened and we found that the whole party was for some reason uneasy. After passing the villages of NEGAINI and NEGAINIGINYA the guides deserted; a thing we had been expecting for some time.

From the point where the guides deserted I at once changed our course to a one more southerly as I knew that WAMGAIWU lay in that direction. By this time it was getting late in the afternoon so camp was made by the side of a small creek.

A.Cs. IRIRI, KAVARI and LUMA were sent to look and see how far we were from WAMGAIWU. At 7 p.m. they returned to say that we were only a few hours walk away from it and that it lay towards the south.

Tuesday 30th. August.

An early start was made and for the protection of the party both Mr Timperley and myself travelled at the head of the line with L/C SAGOI and A.Cs. IADAMA, BOBI and DOMAMASI bringing up at the rear.

The rest of the Police were arranged so that there was an A.C. between each six carriers.

A few natives were met on the track and at the request of A.C. LUMA a number of them agreed to guide us to WAMGAIWU.

The journey was uneventful and at about 10 a.m. we crossed a creek called ABOI'IA and commenced to climb the hill to WAMGAIWU.

When the first of the party was about half way up and at a village called UMBOI'IA, both Mr Timperley and myself heard a shot from the direction of the Creek.

The line was stopped and in a few minutes L/C SAGOI and A.Cs. BOBI, IADAMA and DOMAMASI arrived to say that as they were descending into the gully of ABOI'IA Creek a party of natives suddenly appeared and attacked the party.

Whilst A.C. IADAMA was in the creek bed a native fired two arrows at him, one of which passed through his jumper under the left arm-pit.

IADAMA at once fired and shot this man dead. The rest of the attacking party then ran off. The L/C and the rest of the A.Cs. witnessed this attack on IADAMA.

The unsuccessful attack on the tail of the line evidently disorganised any further attack on the party.

On leaving UMBOI'IA Mr Timperley went ahead whilst I remained behind to cover the tail of the line in case of a further attack.

The carriers who were now thoroughly frightened gave a number of false alarms whilst on their way up the hill and this did not help my injured back at all as at each alarm I had to run up the very steep hill to see what was wrong and be ready to beat off a possible attack.

On reaching the top of the ridge called MAGARAKYA at 5200 ft. we stopped for quite a while to try and ascertain if the natives were contemplating another attack.

From here we continued in a southerly direction and passed through the village of BOBOBENGA and then on through DABAUMGA village. No natives were seen. From here we descended to the Camp 15 on the Lohiki River at 3300 ft. where I had left Corporal AGOTI and two A. Cs.

The Corporal reported that everything was in order but that friendly natives had told him that the WANGAIWU natives were contemplating an attack on this Camp.

One night he had heard natives in the bush near to the camp and after calling had fired a shot into the air to scare them away. From that time no hostile natives had put in an appearance near to the Camp.

Wednesday 31st. August.

We decided to spend the day in the Camp for the purpose of re-packing the stores and also to attend to Official Correspondence and private mail.

As my injured back was still giving me a lot of pain I decided after a long talk with Mr Timperley that I should go on with the Patrol for a few days and then go on in to Kerema in time to meet the Ronald S. so that I could, if complications set in., be able to get away for Medical attention.

A small party of WANGAIWU natives visited the Camp in the afternoon and a little food was purchased. More than likely this party was sent out to see what our exact strength was or to see how our camp was placed. This food was issued to the boys in excess of their ordinary rations.

Thursday 1st. September 1938.

As the quantity of stores necessitated a relay all the carriers were got away early for Camp 14 with the first load of gear.

Mr Timperley and myself and a few police stayed behind so as to be able to ward off a possible attack.

The crossing of the Alberts was accomplished at 4000 ft. and we descended the range to Camp 14 in the village of AMOWA and close to BANGOVE.

From this point Kerema can be seen about 21 miles away.

A large party of local natives accompanied by a Village Councillor from Bangove, visited the Camp and a large quantity of food was purchased.

This food was issued in excess of the ordinary rations.

28

Friday 2nd. September.

An early start was made and the first load of gear was sent down to Camp 12 on ENGE Creek. The boys carried very well and were soon back for the second load. Mr Timperley and I had remained behind in Camp 14 and so went on with the last of the gear.

This Camp 12 is located at 1700 ft above sea level.

By 3.30 p.m. all gear was in the Camp and I set about collecting 18 carriers for my trip in to Kerema on the morrow.

Saturday 3rd. September.

I left Camp 12 at 5.45 a.m. with 18 carriers and A. Cs. IRIRI, UFA, IADAMA and JAMBO.

I passed Camp 11 at 7.30 a.m. and then went on along my old track through Camps 10 and 9. Lunch was eaten in Camp 9 and then we started down the long ridge to Camp 8 on the Lohiki River.

A few natives were seen in the vicinity of NIVU.

On arriving at Camp 8 at 3.30 p.m. I found that the River was in full flood.

Camp was made on the old site and we at once commenced building rafts. Heavy rain fell all day and all night.

Sunday 4th. September.

During the night the river rose still further and by morning it was a raging torrent. It took us five hours to get our gear across and then we started up the long Hill to Camp 7.

Leaving 7 went down the ridge to Camp 6 on the HAUWEIA Creek and thence up ARAI'IA Creek to Camp 5. Here as it was raining heavily and the day was drawing to a close, I made Camp.

No natives were seen this day and except for the flooded Lohiki it was entirely uneventful.

Monday 5th. September.

An early start was made and a quick trip was made down through Camps 4, 3 and 2. No natives were seen and by 12.45 p.m. we were in Camp 1 at the SORI River Base Camp. The whale boat had not put in an appearance so I had the flies erected and settled down to await its arrival.

At 4.15 p.m. the whaler arrived in the charge of Sergeant MODOI and leaving immediately a quick trip was made in to Kerema. where I arrived at 6.45. pm. I reported immediately to the R.M. and informed him that Timperley and the rest of the party should arrive on Friday.

29

Summary.

The time taken on this Patrol could be considerably shortened if one did not have to relay stores. I am of the opinion that a light party could now reach the Tauri Police Camp in about 8 days from here.

The Patrol has shown that most of the population lies to the North East of the Albert Range and that the population on this side is very small indeed.

On conferring with Mr Timperley I understand that the route used by myself is much more difficult than that used by the Tauri Patrol No.2. but of course, it must be remembered that it has the advantage of starting from Kerema and not from a point some days up the Tauri River. All deserters from the patrol were forced to pass through Kerema to get back to their villages and so were easily arrested.

After the loss of Mr P.O. Toogood from the Patrol things looked very black indeed and if it was not for the fine work put in by Sergeant MODOI, L/C/ SAGOI and C.I. MIRIA the patrol would have been much more difficult than it was.

On this patrol no carriers died and so far none have died in their villages since getting back from the patrol.

Of course we had a N.M.A. as we had with us an N.M.A. who did nothing else but to attend to sick or injured carrier and police.

Very little sickness was experienced on the Patrol and except for the few cases which looked like dysentery there was nothing worth speaking about.

The people encountered on the Patrol were not numerous as we found almost all villages deserted on our arrival.

It might be worth mentioning here that as far as deserters from the Patrol are concerned, they were in all cases but two, from the KARAMA, WOMAI and SILO Districts.

I understand that quite a number of deserters from Tauri Patrol No.2. were also from these Districts.

F.A. Bensted. P.O.

Articles	Quantity taken on Patrol	QUANTITIES ISSUED AND VALUE					Returned	Rema.
		Police	Carriers	Others	Total Used	Government Cost		
Rice ...	5920	1390	3850		5240	27 5 10	680	
Biscuits ...	100	50	50		100	110		
Man Sago ...	6300	500	6300		6800	14 3 4		
Sugar ...								
Tea ...	8	8			8	12		
See Marmite	3 lbs.	$\frac{1}{2}$	2		2 $\frac{1}{2}$	10	$\frac{1}{2}$	
Tobacco ...	10	7	3		10	1 5 5		
Matches ...								
Kerosene ...	4	4			4	5 8		
Tents ...								
Flies ...								
Lamps ...								
Buckets ...								
Kerosene Cans ...								
Knives and Sheaths								
Knives, 18 in. ...								
10 in. Knives, others ...	12			8	8	11 6 4		
Knives 12 in. ...	12			7	7	13 5		
Pouches ...								
See C/L Oil	6	$\frac{1}{2}$	2 $\frac{1}{2}$		2	1 2 8 4		
Twill ...	3 bolts			$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	4 9 2 $\frac{1}{2}$		
Handkerchiefs ...	48			16	16	5 32		
Beads ...	18			7	7	11 5 11		
Mirrors ...	60			17	17	17 43		
Axes ...								
Half Axes ...	10						10	
Tomahawks ...	30			11	11	11 4 19		
Carriers Pay as per Vouchers.						120 9		
					Total £	173 4 2		

NOTE.—When an article such as a tent is issued, but is returned for future use, the value should not be entered.

KEREMA

[G.P. 67

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER
3. 28/29

Tauri Police Camp STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by A.T. Timperley P.O. to
Several villages in the close vicinity of the Tauri P.C. for the purpose of
effecting an inspection of the villages and ascertaining the approximate
population

Left Station on _____ Returned to Station on _____

Number of Carriers employed _____ Number of Police taken 6

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge _____

Villages visited EMEPA, IALARIPA, UWATA, GOMAGAGEGA, GWOTUMYA, G. OIEGA, G. OIBINI,
MEGADOGA, AGAMEGA, ADA' ANGA, AI' IA' ANGA, IBUNGU.

- (1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.
- (2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.
- (3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary after each patrol.
- (4) The space below is not to be written in.
- (5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.—1.055.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 12th September, 1938

Pat
Officer in charge of Station

Report of several short patrols to various villages in
the close vicinity of the Tauri Police Camp.

On the 15th August there was still no signs of the Tauri Patrol No.3 which was due to arrive at the Police Camp on or about the 7th August. With this in view I proposed to accomplish a series of short patrols to the villages within the close vicinity of the Camp. I might add that I had promised the surrounding villagers that a visit to their villages would be effected as soon as possible. Friendly relations existed between ourselves and the surrounding natives and it was my intention to sway these people towards the meaning of the word "gavana" as quickly as possible. Following the establishment of the Police Camp feelings between ourselves and Ieivi Creek people were strained and it was not until I had treated an injured native (in all probability I saved the unfortunate kukukuku's life) that a suitable opportunity was afforded for visiting the villages mentioned below.

'Monday, 15th August, 1938'.

On the previous day I had informed IKARUKA, the old chief of the EMEPA village, that it was my intention to visit his village. I requested that Emepa people should be present in their village during the occasion of my visit. The old chief conceded to my request.

At 6.30 a.m. I departed from the Police Camp and was accompanied by A.Cs. Turiai, Bobi and Luma. Travelling in a south-easterly direction we climbed EMEPA, the high hill located in the close vicinity of the Police Camp. From a height of 5500' above sea level we obtained a splendid view of the villages of AMGABA, BAIMGA and ABONA to the south-west and which are located in the Su'ia Creek valley. Continuing our journey along the ridge in a southerly direction we crossed the head of WADANI Creek and eventually arrived on the edge of the Emepa garden lands. After a good deal of shouting IKARUKA made an appearance and stated that his village people were congregating in preparation for a trading trip to GARUNGI, a densely populated valley to the south. This provided an excellent opportunity to obtain some idea as to the extent of

On the occasion of this visit I was informed that the Emepa villagers contemplated building a new village. For the moment the people are domiciled in nine shelters of a substantial nature and which were located in the garden.

A count of the natives including men, women and children who were said to be actual occupants of Emepa village, was seventy-three. The percentage of children was high.

The garden lands which were not extensive, have been cultivated on Wadani Creek. The general appearance of the garden was poor and the main foodstuffs in evidence were pandanus, sweet potatoes, taro, sugar-cane, bananas and a type of yam not often contacted on the coast. A. C. Luma (local A. C. and kukukuku interpreter) emphasised that this yam is not known in the Kaverope-Kovimori country. Interpretation led me to believe that the particular food in question was obtained from the Mandated Territory.

Leaving the garden we climbed in a northerly direction to the top of Emepa where our aneroid read 5700' above sea level. Continuing our journey in a north-easterly course we descended into Ieivi Creek. Travelling down the ridge we passed through the deserted village of AUGANINI which comprises four shelters. AUGANINI is 5500' above sea level.

Shortly after my arrival at the Tauri Police Camp in June I paid a visit to the Emepa garden lands mentioned above. Ikaruka, the old chief, was friendly with me in January of this year when I passed down the Oravia with the Vailala-Tauri geological survey party. Owing to this I was prompted to present the old native with an axe. On my second visit to Emepa he showed me the extent of work he had accomplished with the present he had received; the amount of clearing he had effected during these two months was enormous.

With our arrival on Ieivi Creek we returned to the Police Camp along the track that follows the creek bed to the Oravia River. We arrived in Camp at 3.30 p.m..

'Wednesday, 17th August, 1938.'

I accompanied by A. Cs. Turiai, Kavari and Luma departed from the Police Camp at 7 a.m. and travelled al

3

Ieivi Creek in a general easterly direction to IALARIPA village which had been visited by me on several occasions whilst rendering assistance to the native who had been injured in a land-slide in the vicinity of the Police Camp. This village comprises several sections viz.

(a) Unfenced, comprising three conical shaped houses.

(b) Unfenced, comprising one conical shaped house and four shelters.


(c) Unfenced, comprising four conical shaped houses and six shelters.

(d) Fenced, comprising two shelters.

(e) Fenced, comprising two conical shaped houses and two shelters.

The houses comprising the village of IALARIPA are the most disappointing structures I have seen anywhere on the Tauri River. The gardens too, are poor in comparison with the cultivations outside of the Ieivi Creek area.

At Ialaripa I saw a peculiarly shaped club which is fashioned from a wood called 'IVIAGI' by the local natives. Interpretation led me to believe that this club had been obtained from the WAMAI'IA people who are constantly at war with the AVABAI'IA natives domiciled in the close vicinity of the Police Camp.



The Ialaripa people led me to believe that this type of club is quite frequently seen in the Wamai'ia villages. When passing through the WANAME Creek valley in January I did not see a club of the type I located in the Ialaripa village.

Leaving Ialaripa we climbed to the top of the ridge called INGAGWOIGA at a height of 4800'. Continuing in a north easterly direction we arrived at the village of GOMAGAGEGA, 4900' above sea level. This village comprises three conical shaped houses and three shelters. The estimated population of the Ialaripa-Gomagagega villages is one hundred and seventy natives.

4

Immediately below Gomagasega is WEAVI village which is located on a creek of the same name. WEAVI comprises two conical shaped houses and several shelters of a substantial nature. The population of Weavi was estimated at fifty natives.

After crossing DEGAINI Creek we arrived at the village of UWATA. This village is by far the most satisfactory kuku-kuku village I have yet seen. UWATA comprises three conical shaped houses and seven large shelters and the estimated population of the village is one hundred and ~~three~~^{two} people. The village is neatly fenced and clean; UNDAMEPI, the chief of UWATA, is a powerful man in the Avabai'ia tribe. The ridge upon which UWATA is located is called KAKI and is 5100' above sea level. To the north is WEGOGA, another village comprising three conical shaped houses and five large shelters and has an estimated population of one hundred people.

Leaving UWATA village we returned to the Police Camp via the ridge called WEWA. Our arrival at the Camp was evidenced at 4 p.m...

With the arrival of the No. 3 Tauri Patrol on the 22nd August, I received the news that the Tauri Police Camp was to be abandoned. Unfortunately the patrol referred to above appeared at the Police Camp with a minimum of food and therefore offered no opportunity to accomplish a patrol of any length prior to my departure for the coast. But I was able to pay a visit to the villages on the south eastern wall of the Ieivi Creek basin.

Monday, 23rd August, 1938.

I departed from the Police Camp at 7 a.m. and was accompanied by several A.Cs. and carriers. After my arrival at Ialaripa I continued in an easterly direction until I reached the village of GWOIEGA which comprises three conical shaped houses and five small shelters. This village was disappointing and the estimated population of the GWOIEGA people was seventy five natives. Continuing in a south-easterly direction we arrived at MEGADOGA, a village located on Ieivi Creek and comprising two conical shaped houses and five shelters; the estimated population of the village was sixty natives.

and still continuing in

5

easterly direction we passed through the small village of AGAMEGA which comprises two conical shaped houses and two small shelters. The village was neatly fenced and the estimated population was forty natives.

The villages of the Avabai'ia people domiciled in the Ieivi Creek valley are interspersed through the garden lands. As a matter of fact a very high percentage of the Ieivi Creek valley is cultivated. These people give one the impression that they are "hunted" and hold the Mamai'ia tribe in superstitious dread.

South east of AGAMEGA is ADA'ANGA ---- the largest village in the close vicinity of the Police Camp. ADA'ANGA comprises nine conical shaped houses and fifteen decently constructed shelters. The population was estimated at two hundred people and here again the percentage of children was very high. After leaving Ada'anga we travelled in a south westerly direction to AI'IA'ANGA, a village located on MENANA Creek. AI'IA'ANGA comprises three conical shaped houses and four substantial shelters. I estimated the population as being sixty-five natives.

All the above mentioned villages comprise only those that I actually visited. DEWAGA, IMAKAVI, GOIUMGA, IVIAKAKA, DEWAGEDA, AIBUNGU, MEWINA'IMYA, ADAUNGAHAUA, IAGWOIWINA, ARAMAI'IA and KOIUMGA are also located in the Ieivi Creek valley. This valley is not fertile and the quality of the food cannot be compared with that of the WIAMA-KOKOWA-AGEI grouped villages to the north-west.

After leaving AI'IA'ANGA I passed through the deserted village of Emepa and returned to the Police Camp along the track which follows the Ieivi Creek bed to the Oravia.

When a decision was made to establish the Police Camp on KOROBU-GWAUA on the 6th June, I feared that local natives might resent our presence. Such was not so. The AVABAI'IA people welcomed the appearance of the Government; as a matter of fact we formed a 'buffer' concern between the two tribes. Food was purchased freely with whatever trade

I could offer. On no account whatsoever was there any hostile demonstration which might have been considered serious. Medical attention was rendered freely to the natives located in the close vicinity of the Police Camp.

The estimated population of the natives domiciled within a four mile radius of the Police Camp must exceed two thousand five hundred people. My estimate is a conservative one; I have excluded, of course, the large numbers of natives who are known to be located on the slopes of the Wamami Creek valley. Three miles south-east of the Police Camp is the densely populated valley of the GARUNGI natives who visited the Camp on several occasions. The Koviwori tribe extends from Kiema Creek northwards to Ungoiwona Creek; this particular area which comprises the western wall of the Oravia valley is very thickly populated and I am led to believe that the large numbers of natives who can be located on the eastern wall of the Oravia valley are of another tribe. Interpretation emphasised that the natives were definitely not Koviwori.

Without exaggeration I feel convinced that more natives are to be located in the Oravia valley than was previously surmised.

For the latter ten months the majority of my work has been confined to the kukukuku country and the people contacted have been natives of the Koviwori, Avabai'ia and Wamai'ia tribes. I shall endeavour to draw some comparison between the tribes I have mentioned.

The Koviwori and Avabai'ia people erect houses of similar construction but there remains the difference which is worthy of mention. The Koviwori house is conical in design and on the majority of occasions comprises a double wall which gives a greater sense of protection in the case of an attack against the village. The sleeping platform is generally three feet above the ground and is contained within the second wall of the dwelling. The space between platform and the ground serves as a convenient pigsty. The roof of the house comprises bamboo leaves or lawyer cane leaves.

of the house with heavy timber and the entrance to the dwelling comprises a small hole in the wall through which one enters on his hands and knees. His house is always constructed on a suitable site to emphasise a sense of protection against attack. With the exception of this conical shaped house the Kovimori erect no other structures which give the appearance of frequently used dwellings.

The Avabai'ia also construct a conical shaped house but in this case the base is oval -----not circular as in the case of the Kovimori. This is illustrated in the rough 'plan and elevation' sketched below. The dwelling is single-walled and the platform usually three feet above the ground. The roof comprises grass or bark; the latter is cut and placed on the roof-frame so as to give the appearance of a shingled roof.



Plan and Elevation of Kovimori
House.



Plan and Elevation of Avabai'ia
House.

8

The Avabai'ia and Wamai'ia houses are similar structure as both tribes are located in grass country. The Wamai'ia however, are definitely an agricultural people and the villages are much larger and the houses of a more substantial nature than those of the Kovimori and Avabai'ia.

Villages in the Kovimori country are unfenced therefore unlike those of the Avabai'ia and Wamai'ia. The latter mentioned people enclose their villages with a fence of a servicable nature, this tends to improve the appearance of the villages and during the occasion of my visit to the Avabai'ia in the close vicinity of the Police Camp, I noticed the conspicuous cleanliness of the area within the enclosure. These fences generally are about five feet in height.

The Kovimori and Avabai'ia natives are small in stature. On the other hand the Wamai'ia, who is not a Tauri River but a Vailala River native, is a more heavily built kukukuku who has a fancy for feathers. Irrespective of where and how you may meet the Wamai'ia, you shall always notice that the fighting men have bedecked themselves with feathers --- generally Bird of Paradise plumes. Other ornaments such as pig-tusks are more conspicuous among the Wamai'ia than Kovimori or Avabai'ia natives.

I take this opportunity of mentioning that I was unable to visit the village of the Wamai'ia tribe that attacked the geological survey party in December of last year. The unexpected abandonment of the Tauri Police Camp prevented any patrol from entering the particular area. This was further emphasised when the No. 3 Tauri Patrol arrived at the Police Camp with a minimum of food which necessitated a hasty departure. The village which launched the attack upon the party mentioned, is called IDEIGIA and is located at the head of WANAMI Creek which flows into the Oravia River a mile to the north of the Tauri Police Camp.

The Kovimori and Avabai'ia natives are domiciled in areas where tribal warfare is rife. So are the Wamai'ia people for that matter, but not to the extent as that endured by the two former mentioned tribes. Without exaggeration I feel sure that the Wamai'ia natives number many thousands.

4

and I feel convinced that the people are of an agricultural type. The extent of the cultivated areas and the 'lay-out' of the villages give one the impression that the villages are more or less of a permanent nature. When travelling down the Wamami Creek valley which is located in grass country, the geological party of Oil Search Ltd. passed through several large cultivations. In these areas I particularly noticed that trenches had been dug at various points in the garden in such a manner as to give the impression that irrigation was attempted. The gardens of the Wamami'ia people are very extensive and the only comparison offering on the Tauri River are those areas in the densely-populated IOBI basin. The cultivated lands of the Avabai'ia are not nearly so extensive as those of the Wamami Valley people. I have already mentioned that the Wamami'ia natives are Vailala River people the majority of which are domiciled on the headwaters of the Mbuvi Sa, one of the main tributaries of the Main Vailala River.

Whilst stationed at the Tauri Police Camp I visited the village of WATA to the north-east of the Camp. On the journey I was compelled to travel around the slopes of a peak of volcanic tuff structure. This peak bears the name of INGAGWOIGA and is 4800' above sea level. The track was a splendid one but on approaching Ingagwoiga the climbing became very steep and instead of passing over the crest of the peak in question the local natives had built a road around the slopes of the mountain. Considerable work had been expended in making the track and I noticed that a drain had been dug on the inside of the track with a view of draining away rain waters which would create a wash-away of the road. It was a splendid effort.

The weapons of the three tribes I have mentioned above are similar. The Kovimori uses a large shield whilst the Wvabai'ia and Wamami'ia shields are much shorter and generally made of hard-wood. The Kovimori shield is generally made from a soft wood resembling cedar. The arrows too, differ slightly. Those of the Kovimori are exceptionally long whilst the arrows of the other two tribes are shorter and much heavier. Clubs are of similar types with the exception of that

already mentioned in this patrol report.

~~William T. Pimbley~~ P.O.

KEREMA

[G.P. 67

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

4. 38/39

KEREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by A.F. Timperley P.O.

~~From the Tauri Police Camp to Kerema whilst en-~~ for the purpose of
~~proving the No. 5 Tauri Patrol over the proposed new route to~~
~~the Tauri Police Camp.~~

Tauri Police Camp
Left Station on 25th August Returned to Station on 9th September

Number of Carriers employed 70 Number of Police taken 17

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge

Villages visited Amorio, Daranga, Diaga'au, Boi'lagage, Agwedia, Ado'ia,
Iwamba and several other villages in the Cravia valley, ----- Unbo'ia
Bobobunga and Dabaunga in the Wungaiwa Creek valley ----- Amowa,
Adomai, Iowai, Aibunga, Begai, Nivu and Agwai'ia south of the Albert Range

- (1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.
- (2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.
- (3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.
- (4) The space below is not to be written in.
- (5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.-1.000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 14th September, 1938

Raw
Officer in charge of Station

KEREMA

Report of the patrol conducted by A.T. Timperley
from the Tauri Police Camp to the coast with the
No. 3 Tauri Patrol in charge of Mr. P. O. Bensted.

The No. 3 Tauri Patrol arrived at the Tauri Police Camp on the 22nd August and with this evidenced I received instructions regarding the abandonment of the Camp. I might add that on his arrival Mr. P. O. Bensted emphasised that his supply of stores indicated that our return to Kerema must be effected almost immediately. The carriers were offered the opportunity of a short spell whilst I accomplished a visit to the villages in the close vicinity of the Police Camp. A report of this visit has been forwarded under a separate cover. Nevertheless our departure from the Upper Tauri was witnessed at 7 a.m. on the 25th August.

Thursday, 25th August, 1938.

Our departure from the Police Camp was witnessed at 7 a.m.. The party comprised Mr. P. O. Bensted, myself, L/C. Sagoi, A. Cs. Turiai, Seuna, Kavari, Esefa, Bobi, Iadama, Sabao, Abala, Luma, Kekere, Kuwe, Manai, Bori, Kada, Au'u, Domamasi and Iriri, ---- and ninety-odd carriers.

The weather was ideal and our progress satisfactory. Travelling in a southerly direction for two miles we arrived at the point where the route utilised by the No. 2 Tauri Patrol, crosses the river. The bridge I had built a few days previous was still in evidence and a successful crossing of the Oravia was effected in a minimum of time. At this particular point the Oravia flows through a tuff outcrop and the narrow gorge is no more than forty feet wide. Prior to crossing the stream we passed through an old camp of the No. 2 Tauri Patrol and which may be located on the grassy slopes above MADANI Creek.

Continuing our journey in a southerly direction along the western bank of the Oravia we passed through two other camps utilised by the previous patrol and crossed two fair size streams viz. WUENA and SUI'IA Creeks respectively. The track presents no difficulties and the country is of the open, grass nature interspersed with patches of scrub. At the head of WUENA Creek are the densely populated villages of PE'EMGA,

IVIA and GOMAGU. These villages are in the Kovimori country and the inhabitants are constantly at war with the WANAI'IA tribe which is located in the WANAMI Creek valley, three miles north of EE'ENGA. The SUI'IA Creek is another densely populated area and a splendid view of this area can be obtained from Mt. EBEPA (6100') which is located two and a half miles south east of the Tauri Police Camp.

After crossing Sui'ia Creek Mr. P. O. Bensted decided to pitch camp at the foot of the hill called YEWANGABA. The progress of the carrying line was satisfactory and the journey for the day reasonable. Light rain fell during the evening.

Friday, 26th August, 1938.

With an early start accomplished we commenced the long climb to the top of Yewangaba. After two hours of stiff climbing we arrived at Camp 26 of the No. 2 Tauri Patrol. From this point a glorious view can be obtained of the GARUNGI valley villages which give indication of another densely populated area. I am led to believe that these people are not KOVIMORI and that this particular tribe extends eastwards to the KAPAU, the eastern arm of the Tauri River. I was unable to ascertain the tribal name of this people.

Shortly after leaving this Camp 26 we arrived at the top of Yewangaba at a height of 5400'. At this point a new clearing had been made and two houses erected. This village was not in evidence when I passed through this country in early June.

Continuing the journey along the ridge which presents the 'razor back' variety we eventually passed through Camp 25 and arrived at the deserted village of AMAMIO. Whilst awaiting the appearance of the carriers, a kukukuku suddenly showed up in the garden nearby. Immediately he saw the Government party, a yell and his hasty departure was resultant. Why, I don't really know! When I passed through this village in May I received a very friendly reception and traded freely with the villagers.

From AMAMIO several A.Cs. and carriers were despatched ahead of the party with a view of pitching camp on a suitable site in the close vicinity of HEMOTIEMA G-

leaving AMAMIO we commenced the long descent into UMGOI-
WENA Creek. Passing through the deserted villages of DIAGWA'AUA,
DAMUNGA and BOI'IAGAGO we eventually arrived at Camp 23 of
the No. 2 Tauri Patrol. Here again I was at a loss to understand
the reason why these villages should be deserted.

Light rain fell during the evening. The height
of this camp is 2600' above sea level.

Saturday, 27th August, 1938.

Another early departure from the camp was
witnessed. Passing upstream through the sago owned by the
natives of AGWEDIA village, we later crossed UMGOI-WENA Creek
and continued in a south-westerly direction up a spur
leading down from a prominent range called GUM'LARUNGA by
the local natives. This range forms the southern wall of the
Boulder Creek valley, here again is another densely populated
area.

Passing through garden lands we eventually arrived
at AGWEDIA-GWAUA after crossing a small creek called AGEBLA.
Continuing our journey we descended into BUNGAMA Creek and
pitched our camp on the southern bank.

The distance travelled during the day was not
great and some time was spent in endeavouring to locate my
revolver which had fallen from the holster somewhere between
Agwedie-gwaua and the camp.

During the evening we were visited by villagers
from HAGAVIA and a pig was purchased with steel comprising the
exchange of trade.

A clear, fine evening.

Sunday, 28th August, 1938.

An early departure from Bungama Creek was
evidenced and after crossing the ridge called IBAIUMBA we
descended into the IOBI basin, one of the most densely populated
areas in the Oravia valley. Here again I was at a loss to under-
stand the non-appearance of local natives. The whole country
side was deserted. Passing through IWAMBU, ADEE'IA'AWAUA, FAI'IKA,
AGWANDABA, IBOIBOIGIA and GWIARIBUNGA we eventually arrived
at Camp 16 of the No. 2 Tauri Patrol. This camp is in the

of the IOBI basin and at a height of 3650' above sea level. To the north-east can be seen the characteristic shaped peaks of MAI'IA and UMAI'IA, both of which form a formidable land mark in the UMGOIWENA Creek area. These peaks are over 5000' in height and the western slopes are covered with villages and gardens. The cultivated areas appear to be of great extent and the natives domiciled in the area are said to belong to a tribe other than the Kavinori, this area on the eastern bank of the Tauri is known by the Iobi natives as KAPAU-GWAUA. Interpretation led me to believe that this was nothing but a general name given to people domiciled on the eastern bank of the Oravia.

On my arrival at camp I suggested that the local kukukuku A.Cs. should endeavour to locate several of the natives who had been friendly with me on my previous patrol through the Iobi area. Rain commenced falling at dusk and at this particular time I was visited by a woman reputed to be the sister of UVO who was once a kukukuku local A.C. at Koroma and who accompanied me on the geological survey of the Upper Vailala and Tauri Rivers. I might add that the woman had been invaluable on a previous occasion when she made arrangements for guides to assist the No. 2 Tauri Patrol.

ANGU (the name of the woman referred to in the above paragraph) stated that the natives domiciled in the WENA Creek valley were preparing to attack the Government party. She implored me to return to the coast by way of the Lower Tauri and not as intended by the IOBI-WANGAIWU trade route. She also explained that the 'talk' of the proposed attack had reached Iobi and for this reason the villagers had deserted. The persistent request of ANGU in that I refrain from crossing SIAUWI convinced me that her warning was not to be passed over without considerable thought. For the moment I was inclined to believe that the 'proposed attack on the Government by the WENA Valley people' had filtered through to the Kaverope people and enlarged upon with the result that the rumour regarding an attack upon the Tauri Police Camp was originated. I made mention of my opinion to the Officer in Charge,

Mr. P. O. Bensted. Nevertheless I convinced ANGU that I was crossing SIAUWI and requested that she provide the necessary guides to see the party to WUNGAINU. On stating that she would receive payment in steel for assisting me, ANGU conceded to my request.

Light rain fell during the evening.

Monday, 29th August, 1938.

At this particular stage of the journey Mr. P. O. Bensted suffered another relapse. During the journey from the Tauri Police Camp to Iobi, the Officer in Charge had been alternatively carried and assisted along the track. During the inland trip from Kerema he had received injuries to his back which inconvenienced him greatly.

Shortly after daylight our three guides arrived and we commenced the short, stiff climb to the top of the western wall of the Iobi basin. Travelling in a south westerly direction we eventually arrived at the top of SIAUWI, at a height of 4600'. From this point we obtained a splendid view of the densely populated areas on the eastern bank of the Cravia River. Continuing our journey along HUI'GMEBA, the high ridge immediately behind the village of IOBI, we skirted NAGAVLA, the highest point of the ridge and crossed over onto a spur called AIBUNGA. Here we commenced the descent into WENA Creek. This valley is densely populated and the WENA comprises the main tributary of Kiema Creek --- MEA. Our progress was satisfactory and travelling down the ridge we passed through several deserted villages.

We eventually arrived on WENA Creek where we were greeted by a large party of natives. The track from Iobi to the Wena had been utilised by the No. 3 Tauri Patrol during the inland journey from Kerema. The height of Wena Creek at this stage is 4100' above sea level. The guides were desirous of leaving Mr. P. O. Bensted's route at this point and intended leading the party over the western wall of the valley. The Officer in Charge of the patrol was not prepared to risk a new route owing to the possibility of a shortage of food. It

may be remembered that with our departure from the Tauri Police Camp, our rations emphasised that it was essential for our arrival to the evidenced at a certain stores depot within a limited amount of time. Following the narrow, grassy flats / bordering Wena Creek we eventually arrived at WANDUI, the Camp No. 17 of the No. 3 Tauri Patrol. During the journey from the point of meeting the Wena and subsequent down-stream trip, we passed by the villages of ADEINA, IURO, GANABI, DIDINI, GEWAINA and WABIKAU and crossed numerous small creeks, the largest of which are ANOGA and IWABA. Camp No. 16 is located at the junction of WENA Creek and a small er stream called WANDUIA.

Here the guides were desirous of turning back but I had not forgotten the warning issued by ANGU of Iobi. I pressed the natives to stay but refused until ANGU suddenly appeared and emphasised that she had followed the party for the reason that she was afraid for our safety. I requested that she might take the party over the main Iobi-Wungaiwu trading route and return to her village friends near the Wena Creek area. Accompanied by the guides and Angu, we departed from Camp 17 and climbed rapidly to the top of UDEDUNGA, 4750' where ANGU left the party and returned to Iobi. When passing by WASNI village I noticed the uneasiness of the guides and interpretation indicated that the natives were genuinely afraid. After passing by NEGAINI and NEGAINIGIMYA villages our guides deserted the party. I was not surprised ----- but wondered for the moment if the NEGAINI people were participating of the attack against the Government party. I had not forgotten that the NEGAINI-UMBIU people were the alleged attackers in the rumour regarding the Tauri Police Camp massacre.

After changing our course from a westerly to a more southerly course we crossed ABAL'IA Creek and pitched Camp at 4300' above sea level.

A.Cs. Iriri, Kavari and Luma were despatched along the track with a view of having a "look-see" around the surround country.

Light rain fell during the evening and the A.Cs. reported that we were very close to WUNGAIWU. I now realised

the reasons of desertion of the guides.

Tuesday, 30th August, 1933.

Another early start was evidenced. I mention here that I was with the head of the party for the purpose of recording a rough traverse of the track to the SORI.

Leaving camp we climbed steadily until we reached a height of 4750' where we were overlooking the densely populated WUNGAIWU Creek valley. Travelled down a spur named JAI'IA we eventually arrived at a point above JAI'IA village, where after much calling out some dozen or more natives appeared and approached the party.

The WUNGAIWU Creek valley comprises many villages a few of which are ABYE'IA, UAGHUBOLA, MAIBA, WAGAI'IA, GWAMBIA, AGAGAMA, GANAGAIBA, UMBOI'IA, TIMANTA, AHANSEWA and WUNGAIWU. At the request of A.C. Iadama several natives offered to guide our party across the valley to the top of the ridge called MAGARAKIA, the western wall lining WUNGAIWU Creek.

Continuing in a southerly direction we crossed Wungaiwu Creek and on our arrival at BOBOBUNGA village turned away in a south westerly direction.

On our arrival at UMBOI'IA, a village on the slopes of MAGARAKIA, the Officer in Charge and myself heard a rifle shot with the result that the carrying line was halted for the purpose of ascertaining the reason of the firing. Within a short period L/C. Segoi, A.Cs. Iadama, Bobi and Dommasi reported that whilst crossing ABOI'IA Creek, a small stream flowing into WUNGAIWU Creek a party of natives appeared fully armed and prepared to attack the party. A.C. Iadama on entering the gully forming ABOI'IA Creek was attacked by a native who discharged an arrow which passed through the A.Cs. jumper just under the left armpit. His assailant was shot dead. The A.C. had survived a very close call and no blame can be attached upon the A.C. who defended himself against further attack. The L/C and A.C. Bobi were eye-witnesses to the incident.

The warning passed on by NEGU of Jobi had contained substance and I now realised that the report regarding the alleged massacre at the Tausi Police Camp had originated in the WUNGAIWU area. I am convinced that the WUNGAIWU-NEGAINI-UMBOI'

natives had every intention of attacking the Government party and this 'talk' had filtered through to the Kaverope villages where natives reported to Kerema 'what had not happened, but what was going to happen'. The attack was definitely premeditated ----- in all probability these people might have suggested a night attack upon the Police Camp. Hence the report at Kerema regarding the attack upon the Upper Tauri Patrol.

The unsuccessful attack upon the 'tail of the carrying line' completely disorganised any further hostility from the natives. I am led to believe that when the No. 3 Tauri Patrol passed through the Wugaiwu valley on the inland journey, the natives domiciled in the Hegaini villages were most unfriendly and greeted the party with the usual insults characteristic of the kukukuku. At this time a plot may have been hatched to attack the party on the return journey. Unfortunately the natives had not reckoned with the increased strength of the party from the Tauri Police Camp.

Leaving UMBOI'IA I journeyed ahead of the carrying line and the Officer in Charge returned to the 'tail' in order to institute necessary precaution against any further attack. On arriving at the top of the ridge ----- MAGARALEYA 5200' ----- a halt was called in order to allow the carrying line to congregate prior to the descent to the Iavi Creek. At this point we remained for some considerable time with a view of ascertaining if the Wugaiwu valley natives contemplated a further attack upon our party.

Continuing in a southerly direction we passed through BOBOBUMGA and skirted a rocky outcrop of the same name. The height of this latter peak is approximately 6500' above sea level. Bearing away in a south westerly course we arrived at DABAUMGA village at 4700' and continued the journey down the ridge until we arrived at Camp 15 of the No. 3 Tauri Patrol. This camp is located on Iavi Creek which is the main tributary of the Lohiki River; the height of the camp is 3300' above sea level.

At this point Mr. P. O. Bensted had formed a

temporary stores depot which had been placed in the charges of Cpl. Agoti and A.Cs. Ufa and Jambo. The N.C.O. reported that everything was in order but friendly natives had informed him that WUNGAIWU natives had contemplated attacking the stores depot. This emphasises the deliberate intention of the local natives. After leaving the Wungaiwu valley villages petered out and very few natives were contacted on the track.

Light rain fell during the evening.

Wednesday, 31st August, 1958.

The Officer in Charge decided to spend the day in Camp I5 for the purpose of re-packing and distributing loads. Private mail and official correspondence was attended to for despatch to Kerema on the following day.

At this stage of the journey Mr. P.O. Bensted was still suffering from the injuries received on the inland trip to the Tauri Police Camp and it was decided that he should return to Kerema as quickly as possible in order to avert any serious complications that might arise through delay in receiving medical attention.

A small party of Wungaiwu natives visited the Camp during the late afternoon and small quantities of food were purchased with beads as exchange of trade. This food was issued to the carriers in excess of ordinary rations.

A clear, fine day.

Thursday, 1st September, 1958.

The quantity of stores now in evidence emphasised a relay and it was hoped that we could overcome the difficulty with the "double-banking" procedure. The carriers were despatched to Camp I4 with the Cpl. and majority of the A.Cs. in charge of the carriers.

Mr. P.O. Bensted and myself with several A.Cs. remained at Camp I5 until the carriers returned in readiness for the second journey to Camp I4. Our motive in remaining behind was to resist a possible attack from the Wona Creek valley natives.

Leaving Camp No. I5 we travelled in a south westerly direction in ascending the Albert Range ----- called SAUWAI by

by the local natives. The crossing was accomplished at 4000' above sea level and the track excellent. Descending the southern wall of the range Camp No. 14 was located in the close vicinity of the village called AMOWA. Other villages nearby at the head of AMABWA Creek are BANGOBA and BAWADUNGA. From Amowa one can obtain a splendid view of the country to the south and Kerema can be sighted clearly; this point is no more than twenty one miles from Kerema as the crow flies.

A large party of local natives visited the camp with food which was purchased with beads; this food was issued to the natives in excess of ordinary rations.

The local village councillor from Bangoba reported; the natives in this area are ever so much more sophisticated than the people domiciled in the Cravia valley. The population south of the Albert Range cannot be compared with that of the Tauri areas. In fact the country south of the 'SAUWAU Range' is sparsely populated.

Light rain fell during the evening.

Friday, 2nd September, 1938.

It was the intention of the Officer in Charge to relay the stores to Camp 12 on Enge Creek.

An early departure was evidenced and travelling in a south westerly direction we crossed PE'IA Creek and changed our course to a more southerly direction until we arrived in BE'IA village. Skirting AIBUNGA village we travelled to the south west along a spur which ran down towards ENGE Creek as an off shoot from UDUBAITU. On our arrival on ENGE Creek we followed the stream in a southerly direction until Camp 12 was located at a height of 1700' above sea level.

I mention here that the track utilised is that cut by the No. 3 Tauri Patrol. Progress was satisfactory and the carriers were returned to collect the stores that had been left at AMOWA with the L/C/ and several of the A.Cs. in charge.

WAI'U villages are to be located at the head of ENGE Creek.

II.

Light rain fell during the late afternoon evening.

Saturday, 3rd September, 1938.

At Camp No. II Mr. P. O. Bensted had formed another stores depot which had been placed in the charge of A. Cs. Miro and Waino.

At this stage of the journey the Officer in Charge, Mr. P. O. Bensted decided to return to Korema in order to receive medical attention, if necessary. With this emphasised the Officer mentioned departed for the coast with four A. Cs. and eighteen carriers.

I was compelled to return to ENGE ---- Camp II ---- for the stores left there by the No. 2 Tauri Patrol. Leaving Enge Creek we climbed in a southerly direction through the villages of ADEMEI and IOWAI which are located on the ridge forming the divide between Enge and Ungoi'ia Creeks. Immediately on my arrival at Camp II at a height of 2200', the carriers were returned to Enge Creek in order to relay the stores left there with the L/C Sagoi and several of the A. Cs. in charge. The relay was completed at 2.30 p.m..

During the afternoon we were visited by a large party of natives from BANGODA and WAI'U and quantities of food were purchased with beads as exchange of trade. This food was issued to the carriers in excess of their ordinary ration.

Heavy rain fell during the evening.

Sunday, 4th September, 1938.

An early departure was resultant.

Travelling in a general westerly direction I passed around the head of UNGOI'LA Creek and crossed over onto the ridge called IAMARUA. With this accomplished we travelled in a general south easterly course down the ridge which runs parallel with the bed of Enge Creek. After passing through several small cultivated areas we arrived at the village of BEGAI and NIVU. The Camp No. 10 at a height of 2400' is in the close vicinity of the latter mentioned village. Here I halted the carrying line for a short spell and to obtain a view

of the near-by country. To the south west one can see the large bend of the Iavi Creek as it flows parallel with the Lohiki-Kiona Creek divide and breaks through the south western extremity of the SAUMAU Range. Six miles west of Nivu is another densely populated valley.

Leaving Nivu we travelled southwest along a well defined track which led in a south westerly direction towards HAI'IVA Creek, a fairly large stream which eventually flows into Iavi Creek.

We arrived at the Camp No.9 of the No.3 Tauri Patrol at noon and the carriers were returned to Enge to relay the stores left there in the charge of the L/C. and several of the A.Cs...The distance was too great to expect the stores to be relayed to HAI'IVA before dark so arrangements were made for the carriers and escort to remain at NIVU overnight and continue the journey down the ridge called DAGWUMBA on the following morning.

At Nivu village the natives have built a dwelling which in some ways resembles a 'dubu'. In all probability Nivu villagers have visited Opac and returned to DAGWUMBA with the intentions of erecting a building similar in construction to the miniature 'dubu' type so often seen on the coast.

During the late afternoon we were visited by natives of the NIVU villagers and small quantities of food were purchased with beads comprising the exchange of trade.

The land in the close vicinity of Camp No.9 is known as WI'IU'IA.

Torrential rain fell during the evening.

Monday, 5th September, 1938.

The L/C. and A.Cs. with the carriers arrived with the remainder of the stores at 8.30 a.m. and as their early arrival had been anticipated, I intended pushing on to the second crossing of the Iavi Creek.

Leaving WI'IU'IA I crossed Hau'iva Creek and travelled in a south westerly direction along the ridge called KAIAPUNAU until I reached the Camp No.8 of the No.3

Tauri Patrol. Here we found the Iavi Creek in high flood with the result that rafting was necessitated. Carriers were despatched immediately back to Wi'iu'ia in order to relay the stores through whilst several of the A.Gs. and myself constructed the necessary raft.

With the raft constructed the stores were ferried across the stream and stacked on the opposite bank of the river. Similar operations were indulged in when the return of the carriers was evidenced.

Heavy rain was threatening so I decided to camp in a satisfactory position and have the stores relayed through as quickly as possible. This camp was to be located on the ridge called AI'IU'IU at a height of 1800' above sea level. The necessary relay was accomplished in the minimum of time and the carriers had adopted an enthusiastic attitude. They realised that their work was nearing completion with the result that their eagerness to cover as much ground as possible emphasised very satisfactory progress.

Very heavy rain fell during the evening. At this stage of the journey many natives were following the party with a view of visiting Kerema station.

Tuesday, 6th September, 1938.

Another early departure was evidenced and we continued in a south easterly direction along the ridge called AI'IU'IU until we reached the Camp No. 7 of Mr. P. O. Bensted's party on the inland trip to the Tauri Police Camp. This point is 2000' above sea level and a splendid view of Kerema was obtained.

Leaving this camp we continued along the ridge on a general southerly course and after passing through the temporarily deserted village of AGWAI'IA, travelled down the ridge called DEBAGU, crossed a small creek, climbed to the top of and travelled down AWARU'AVA, the ridge upon which is located the Camp No. 6 of the No. 3 Tauri Patrol. This latter mentioned camp is to be located in the close vicinity of HAUVE'IA Creek, a fair sized stream which flows into the Iavi Creek. The height of Camp No. 6 is 600' above sea level.

Here I halted the carriers for a brief rest
the journey to one of the lower camps.

With our departure from Camp No.6 evidenced
we crossed Hauwe'ia Creek and travelled upstream until we
located ARAI'IA Creek which drains down from the ridges called
IEMIAU by the local natives. Travelling in a south easterly
direction along Arai'ia Creek we eventually passed by TOROWANA
Creek and arrived at the Camp No.5 of the No.3 Tauri Patrol
at a height of 1100' above sea level.

The track which is confined to the creek bed,
is far from satisfactory and the progress of the party was
not up to expectations. After leaving Camp No.5 we broke
away from Arai'ia Creek and travelling in a general southerly
direction later arrived at Camp No.4 which is to be located
in the close vicinity of the PI'AI'IA and URAI'IA Creeks
which junction in the garden land called PI'AI'IA.

After a brief spell the carriers were returned
to the point where the L/C. and several A.Cs/ were in charge
of a quantity of stores and equipment. It was intended that
the carriers were to commence relaying the stores and camp
overnight at Camp No.7.... The remainder of the journey was
to be accomplished on the following day to Camp No.4.

A small party of local natives visited the camp
and small quantities of food were purchased with beads.

Heavy rain fell during the evening.

Wednesday, 7th September, 1938.

The carriers returned to Camp No.4 ahead of
schedule. A splendid effort and I take this opportunity of
making mention of the splendid services rendered by L/C/Sagoi.
This N.C.O. is an excellent man and very consistent in his
performances.

After a short spell the carriers were despatched
with the majority of the lighter loads to a point mid-way
between Camps Nos. 2 and 3 where a temporary shelter was construc
ed for storing provisions overnight. The carriers returned to
Camp No.4 at 4 p.m..

Local natives visited the Camp during the day

and small quantities of food were purchased which were issued to the carriers in excess of their ordinary rations.

Once again heavy rain fell during the late afternoon.

Thursday, 8th September, 1938.

Leaving Camp No.4 we travelled up-stream a short distance until we reached the junction of PI'AI'IA and URAI'IA Creeks. Here again we broke away in a general south easterly direction and our track was confined to the creek bed. This emphasised very slow progress and indicated unsatisfactory travelling conditions for the carriers who were behaving splendidly. Their eagerness to cover the ground as quickly as possible introduced enthusiasm.

With our arrival at UDAI'IA, the No.3 Camp of the No.3 Tauri Patrol evidenced, we continued in a southerly direction and crossed DABO, the ridge forming the divide between URAI'IA and DANGWA Creeks. Travelling down the latter mentioned creek we eventually passed through IBAMA'I, another camp of the patrol referred to above, and continued on a southerly course along the ridge called IAI'IU. Here we reached the WABADA Creek -----SORI ----- which we followed down stream until the base camp was located.

Shortly after our arrival at the Sori, the whale-boat arrived from Kerema with mail etc..

The carriers were eager to return and the relay was accomplished in a minimum of time. I delayed my departure for Kerema until the following day in order to supervise the sorting out and stacking of stores and equipment.

Light rain fell during the afternoon.

Friday, 9th September, 1938.

My departure for Kerema was witnessed at 6.30 a.m. The Resident Magistrate had kindly attended to the necessary arrangements regarding the transport of carriers and stores from the Sori to Kerema station.

I reported to the R.M. at 11 a.m. Later carriers and stores were relayed to Kerema by canoes.

Alfred Campbell R.O.

SUMMARY:-

On the return journey from the Tauri Police Camp to the coast over the route utilised by the No.3 Tauri Patrol I was provided with an opportunity of having a "look-see" at the country in the vicinity of the Albert Mts..The country is very similar to that on the Tauri, north of Kiama Creek. It may be remembered that to the south of Kiama Creek is limestone belt which forms Hall's Gates and which continues through northwards towards YAMUTI Creek and beyond.

SATWAU is the name given to the Albert Range which comprises volcanic tuff to a great extent. The country is not very difficult to travel through and the crossing of the range was accomplished at 4000'.

The country south of the SATWAU is sparsely populated. One could offer no comparison with the Oravia valley which 'harbours' thousands of natives whose cultivated areas are very extensive. I think the Officer in Charge of the No.3 Tauri Patrol shall coincide with my opinion in that the population of the Tauri area is greater than what is generally surmised. Here I am speaking only of the Kavinori tribe ~~-----~~ † am making no reference to the densely populated area in the vicinity of the recently abandoned Tauri Police Camp.

.....*Alan G. Simpson* p.o..

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

5. 28/39

K E R E M A STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by G. W. Toogood. P.O. to
PORT MORESEBY and back. for the purpose of
Medical attention.

Left Station on 21st July, 1938. Returned to Station on 22nd September, 1938

Number of Carriers employed Five Number of Police taken One

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge -

Villages visited SILU, WAMAI, KARAMA, KOARU, DELEFIRU, HABU HABU, TAVAFURU,
KUKIPI, MOTU MOTU, LESE, BIARU, IOKEA, SEPOI, OIAPU, KIVORI, WAIMA,
PINAPAKA, KAIRUKU, DELENA, HISIU, MANU MANU and PORT MORESEBY.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.—1.055.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 26 Sept, 1938

Ran
 Officer in charge of Station

PATROL REPORT

OFFICER: G. V. Toogood. P.O.

FROM: 21st July, 1938.

Accompanied Mr. P.O. Bensted in the Whaleboat to the Base Camp site for the third Tauri Patrol, on the SORI River, arrived at 2.30 p.m., and spent the remainder of the day clearing the ground and erecting a few tents, while Mr. Bensted returned to Kerema in the Whaleboat.

Friday, 22nd July.

Note received by the Whaleboat from the P.M. G.D. instructing me to return to Kerema immediately, as a report had been received that a massacre had taken place at the Tauri Police Camp. Arrived at Kerema at about 11.0 a.m., informed that the report had been brought in by an ex Kukukuku A.C., and that a Plane was leaving Port Moresby that day. Plane arrived at 2.0 p.m., pilot K. Garden in charge, he had landed at KAIRUKU, where Mr. A.R.M. Healy joined the Plane. Plane left Kerema at 2.30 p.m. to fly over the Tauri Camp, aboard were Messrs. Healy, Bensted and self. Flying in an easterly direction the Tauri River was picked up at BELL'S GATES, and the western arm of the Tauri followed up to the Camp, where everything was found to be in apparent good order, after sweeping over the camp, we returned, flying low, and dropped a mail, together with instructions for the Officer in Charge to be sent to the camp. To give the Officer time to collect the message, we flew in a northerly direction up the Tauri Valley, where I was able to confirm my observations contained in Patrol Report No.21 of 1937/8 to the Border, also an excellent landing-ground, suitable for almost any size or type of Aircraft, was observed about eight miles from the Police Camp. Returning over the Camp the Officer in Charge; Mr. A. T. Timperley; was seen to give the "All Well" signal, and with a final dive over the Camp the Plane returned to the coast, landing at Kerema at 4.30 p.m. where, after Mr. P.O. Bensted and myself having disembarked, it proceeded to Kairuku and thence to Port. Spent the night at Kerema.

Saturday, 23rd July.

Left Kerema by Whaleboat in company with Mr. Bensted and the remainder of the Police for the Tauri Patrol, arriving at 2.30 p.m. continued clearing the area and erecting the rest of the Fly's.

Sunday, 24th July.

Finished clearing Base Camp site, and commenced arranging gear for Patrol.

Monday, 25th July.

Completed fixing gear and tying up swags. Made quick trip in whaleboat to Kerema and back, to make final adjustments regarding Radio communication.

Have daily radio communication with both Port Moresby and Kerema.

Have been suffering considerable inconvenience with some form of Sepsis under the right arm, for about two weeks, unfortunately growing worse.

Tuesday, 26th July.

Left Base Camp at 7.0 a.m. with Mr. P. O. Bensted, Police, and Carriers, and proceeded to Camp No.2. (See Patrol Report No.2 of 1938/9). Communicated position and progress by Radio to the P.M.G.D. at Kerema. Condition of arm far worse, arm and chest commencing to swell.

Wednesday, 27th July.

Left Camp No.2 at 7.0 a.m. and continued to Camp No.3. (See Patrol Report No.2 of 1938/9). On arrival at Camp No.3, chest and arm swollen considerably. I was advised by the Officer in charge of Patrol, Mr. Bensted, to obtain advice from Port Moresby. Called Moresby on the emergency schedule at 5.0 p.m., the Radio Station kindly connecting me straight through to the Government Medical Officer, Dr. Williams, who advised me to proceed to Port Moresby without delay. Called the P.M.G.D. on the Radio at 6.0 p.m. and notified him of the Doctors instructions, he advised me to follow the G.M.O's. instructions and to return to the station the following day.

Thursday, 28th July.

Left Camp No.3 at 7.0 a.m. and proceeded through Camp No.2 to the Base Camp where the Whaleboat was awaiting me. Left the Base at 2.15 p.m. and arrived at Kerema Station at 4.45 p.m.. Met Messrs. Howell and Nolan of the S.D.A. Mission at the station, and although Mr. Nolan had had considerable medical experience, he said he was unable to do anything, and advised me to proceed to Port Moresby. As the vessel "Chinsurah" was due at IORSA the following day, it was

deemed advisable to proceed there straight away, as there was a fair chance of catching her. Left Kerema Station at 5.30 p.m. and proceeded all night along the beach to KUKUPI, arriving there at an early hour in the morning. Here Messrs. Oil Search Ltd. advised me to wait until about 9.0 o'clock, when they would hear over the radio whether a Plane would be coming out for them to Kukipi, in the meanwhile had a spot of Breakfast. When it was learnt that the Plane would not be coming, I immediately proceeded along the beach to IOKEA, where it was found that the "Chinsurah" left there a couple of hours previously. As I was in a fairly bad way by this time I continued to MORU, where Mr. & Mrs. Nixon of the I.M.S. Mission were exceedingly kind, giving me the utmost care and attention.

Saturday, 30th July.

Advised by Mr. & Mrs. Nixon that it would ^{be} most unwise to continue the journey that day as I was not in a fit condition to travel, and I would be far better to stay in bed.

Sunday, 31st July.

Left MORU at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded by way of the beach past SEPOI, IAPU, and KIVORI to WAIMA, where the night was spent. Had a little trouble at KIVORI in getting carriers, this was reported to the A.R.M. at Kairuku.

Monday, 1st August.

Left WAIMA at 7.30 a.m. and continued to PINAPAKA where a number of Kairuku A.C.'s. were preparing for a Patrol, which Mr. A.R.M. Healy was to start on the following day, as the Whaleboat was with the Police, I took me across to KAIRUKU, where I reported to Mr. A.R.M. Thompson and remained the night.

Tuesday, 2nd August.

Left KAIRUKU at 8.0 a.m. with five Prisoners as carriers and one A.C., and crossed to DELONA by Whaleboat, from there proceeded on foot to about two miles from SBU Plantation, where Mr. D. Ross kindly gave me a lift in his car to HISIU, where it was found that I had just missed the "H & S" from ARCA, but learned that the "Chinsurah" had come out from Port Moresby to the Kamosia District that day, and that she would most likely be returning next day, so spent the night at HISIU.

Wednesday, 3rd August.

Left HISIU at 6.0 a.m. and proceeded to MANU MANU, where the "Chinsurah" passes from Kamosia, but learnt that she had returned to

to Port Moresby the previous evening. As the "H & S" was due to return to AROA the next day, I returned to HISIU to await her.

Thursday, 4th August.

Remained at AROA all day, the "H & S" arrived at 4.30 p.m. but was not returning until next day.

Friday, 5th August.

"H & S" loading Dessicated Coconut all day and sailed at 5.0 p.m. on the tide for Port Moresby.

Saturday, 6th August.

Arrived at Port Moresby at about 2.0 a.m., so remained on-board until 7.30 a.m., when I proceeded straight to the Hospital and reported to the G.M.O.. At 10.0 a.m. reported to the Acting Government Secretary, and was instructed to assist at the Resident Magistrate's Office during my stay in Port Moresby.

Monday, 8th August to Monday, 12th September.

Receiving Medical attention as an out-patient twice daily, during which time I was assisting the Acting Resident Magistrate, Mr. S. H. Chance, with the general Court and Office work in the A.R.M.'s Office.

S. J. Good

P.O.

23. 9. 1938.

REPORT of PATROL

from

PORT MORESBY TO KEREMA

OFFICER: G. W. Toogood. P.O.

FROM: 13th September, 1938.

Left Port Moresby at 8.30 a.m. on the 12th September, 1938, by the Motor Vessel "Gwen", and after an uneventful trip arrived at KAIRUKU at about 6.30 p.m., and reported to the A.R.M., with whom I stayed the night.

14th September, 1938.

Received instructions from the A.R.M. Kairuku to investigate a theft of money from The Steamships Trading Co's. store at KAIRUKU, as it was suspected that the theft had been committed by natives of KARAMA villages, in the Gulf Division. Inquiries were made at the various stores on the Island and a note taken of all goods sold during the 12th & 13th inst.. Prepared to leave Kairuku the following morning.

15th September.

Left Kairuku at 7.45 a.m., by the Station Whalebcat, with A.C. TUIA and six Prisoners, and proceeded by way of the coast past the villages of PINAPAKA and AIMA to KIVORI, where the night was spent at the Rest House.

16th September.

Left KIVORI at 10.0 a.m., start being delayed by the tide at Cape Possession, arrived at the Beach Camp of The Aponaipi Petroleum Co., and there delivered a mail, was informed here that quite a number of unemployed natives had gone up to the company's Drilling Camp, about a mile and a half inland, so proceeded there. Questioning all the natives around the camp, proved that none had come from KAIRUKU later than a week previously. It then being after 4.0 p.m. it was decided to spend the night at the Camp.

17th September.

Left the Aponaipi Camp at 10.0 a.m., after accepting the invitation of Mr. Haynes, the Manager, to take a look at the Drilling operations, the company seem most enthusiastic over their prospects, and are down to 900 feet with the drill, then proceeded on to GIAPU where the I.M.S. annual festival was drawing to a close, Head-dresses and Dances being of quite a good standard. Continued to MORU, where

(2)

Mr. M. Nixon's kind invitation to stay the night was accepted.

Sunday, 18th September.

Upon Mr. Nixon being informed of the theft at Kairuku, he suggested that perhaps the culprits; allowing that they had come this way; had joined in the festivities at BIAPU, and also suggested that it might be advisable to remain there the day, to allow the natives who had attended the festival to get back to their own villages. This being a sound idea, it was followed, Mr. Nixon being an authority on the KOARIPI language, very kindly instituted a few enquiries locally, the only result being that previous reports of four KAPAMA natives having gone through was corroborated.

Monday, 19th September.

Left MORU at 7.30 a.m. and proceeded through the villages of IOKKA, BIARU, IESSE and MOTU MOTU to KUKIPI, arriving at 5.30 p.m. spent the night here.

Tuesday, 20th September.

Spent the morning making enquiries regarding MOVIAMI and KUKIPI natives, however the V.C.'s. were assured that no natives of either villages had been to, or returned from KAIRUKU during the past two weeks. Left KUKIPI at 12.30 and proceeded by canoe towards TAVAFURU, unfortunately it was rather heavy weather and about mid-way the canoe swamped, the natives were rescued and a ducking the shore was reached. Proceeding through TAVAFURU and HABU HABU; which village, by the way, is still in an unsafe position owing to the high tides and wash-away. More trouble was encountered whilst crossing from HABU HABU to IKIKIPI, the canoe again swamping. Continued to KOARU where further enquiries were made. It was learnt here that a native by name OASOVA had recently returned from KAIRUKU in company with three KAPAMA natives, upon request this natives father had no objection to me looking at his belongings, OASOVA having been taken to Kerema and imprisoned on an earlier charge of deserting from a Tauri Patrol, however nothing incriminating was found amongst the belongings. The night was spent at KOARU.

Wednesday, 21st September.

Left KOARU at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded to the KAPAMA villages, at URU, there were two natives who had recently returned from Yule Is. and like OASOVA they were Tauri Patrol deserters and likewise had

(3)

been taken and imprisoned at Kerema, and again upon request the relatives of these natives by name TATIAVA and LALABIKIAU, willingly allowed an inspection of their property, but nothing of a stolen nature could be found. At MONCI the only other native from all along the coast who had returned recently from KAIRURU was AVANA, and he also had no objection to having his gear examined, and nothing suspicious was found. All these natives it later turned out had returned before the theft at Kairuka was committed. Investigation proved however that if the theft was committed by Gulf Division natives, they cannot have yet returned to their villages, therefore a further enquiry will be made next week when a Patrol will be made through the KARAMA district again. Continuing on through WAMAI villages to SILO where, on account of the tide coming up round the Bluff, the night was spent.

Thursday, 22nd September.

Left SILO at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded over the CUPOLA to Kerema Station, where report was made to the P.M. G.D. at 12.0 noon.

E. J. ...
P. O.
23. 9. 1938.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

6 of 38/39

Kerema STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F. A. Benstead, P.O. to
 the KARAMA District and back to Kerema for the purpose of
 completing the Tax Patrol East.

Left Station on 27/9/38 Returned to Station on 30/9/38

Number of Carriers employed IIO Number of Police taken 2

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Nil/

Villages visited PARAKOU. KIOVIARAF IRU. IVARIKA. KEREVA. NAUKIAVA. NAWIOVIOPATERA.
MOROI. IVAF IRU. KAIVIPI. PUKARI. ARU. URU. MORA 'A. MA 'ARU. NOKUOV C. POMARA.
PARAKAHU. IROPE. LALABU. IVEF IRU. IVAU 'U. AIKABULUKA. SILO. NABOURA. LAU. URIRI.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.—1.000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 4 Oct, 1938

Ramin
 Officer in charge of Station

Report of a Patrol by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to the KARAMA District
for the purpose of completing the Tax Patrol East.

Tuesday, 27th. September 1933.

Acting on the instructions I had received from the R.M.G.D. I left
the Station at 3.45 a.m. for SILO.

Accompanying me were A.Cs. MIRO and ABAI'IA and C.I. MIRIA.

I had recruited 19 carriers from IPISI village on the Monday and
these carried my gear as far as SILO village on the Eastern side of
the Cupola. Here the IPISI carriers were paid off and SILO boys obtain-
to, carry on to KARAMA.

In SILO I was met by V.C. NAVALI and I inspected the village to find it
in fair condition. The ground was strewn with the fronds of coconut
palms, blown off by the strong wind we have been experiencing for the
last few weeks. I ordered these to be cleared away and burned but I
fear that it will only be a few days before more are blown down.

On leaving SILO I went on for half an hour to WAAI villages and here
was met by V.Cs. KARU and GASAREA. These villages were in the same
state as SILO and I issued the same orders in regard to the fallen
palm fronds.

Only a short stay was made in WAAI and I then passed along the
beach to the KARAMA District.

I arrived at the Rest House at 2.15 p.m. and at once paid off the
SILO carriers and made camp.

Soon after I entered the village V.Cs. NOVO and MALKO arrived and
reported. The rest of the afternoon was spent in inspecting the vill-
es of PARAKOU, KIOVIARAFIRU, IVARIKA, KEREV, NAUKIAVA, NAVAIVIPATEI
MOROI, IVAFIRU, KAIVIPI-PUKARI, ARU, and URU.

I found all these villages to be in fair condition and issued the
orders in regard to the clearing up and disposal of the fallen Palm
fronds.

By this time I was not feeling too well as my back, which I had inju-
on the Tauri Patrol No.3 was again troubling me. I returned to the
Rest House and retired to my bed to spend a very uncomfortable and
sleepless night.

Wednesday 28th. September.

I started work at 7 a.m. and collected what Taxes had not been paid at Kerema. Nearly all of the Taxable natives had been in and paid their Tax at Kerema so I found only a few boys who were to pay Tax for 37/38. By noon I had collected all the outstanding taxes and had revised the Census and paid the Family Bonus.

There were a few payments for carriers to be made from the W.N.L.A/C and by 1 p.m. I had also completed these.

After lunch I sent all the gear along with 20 carriers to WAMAI Rest house whilst I and MIRIA visited the trading site of W. W. Field near to KARAMA to enquire into the depredations made by pigs on his garden. I ordered that the village people who were living on either side of the trading site were to send their pigs back to KARAMA from where they had brought them soon after Mr Field took up residence on his present Trading Site.

On completing this work I went on to WAMAI and then spent the rest of the afternoon in inspecting the villages of MORA'A, MA'ARU, NOKUOVO, POMARA, PARAKAHUIKEPEK, IROPE, and LALABU.

All villages in fair condition except for large numbers of fallen frond which I ordered to be cleared away.

I forgot to mention that before leaving KARAMA I held C.N.M. over an adultery case and sentenced the defendant to 4 months Imp. H.L.

By the time I had inspected all villages it was getting late so I returned to the Rest House for the night.

Thursday 29th. September.

Started work again at 7 a.m. and owing to the few people in the WAMAI District I was able to complete all the work connected with Tax and the payments to carriers from the W.N.L.A/C.

At 11.30 a.m. I packed up, and moved on to SILO where I at once started work and by 3.30 p.m. I had finished.

Most of the people from these Districts have been in to Kerema and paid their tax there.

The rest of the afternoon was spent in visiting and inspecting the villages of IVEFIRU, IVAU'U, AIKABULUKA, and SILO. These villages were all in fair condition and clean.

Late in the afternoon I visited the new SILO District village of NABOURA which is being built on the western side of Silo Creek and up on the slopes of the Cupola. This is the makings of a fine village as the people seem to take a pride in it and have planted flowers and shrubs everywhere. The site is ideal as it is high on the hill yet sheltered from the winds. There is a good supply of running water close to the village and the soil is ideal for gardening.

On arriving back at the Rest House I found a LORABADA Councillor there and told him to proceed at once to the village of LAU and have the people assemble ready for me to take the census in the morning.

Friday 30th. September.

I left SILO at 5.45 a.m. to escape being caught by the tide as I went around the foot of the Cupola.

This track to LAU village lies at the foot of the cliffs and is a very rough track indeed. It is impassable at high tide and if one were to be caught by the tide whilst attempting to go around the position could be very serious indeed as the cliffs are sheer and there are few places where you could scale them.

About half way between the village and the start of the Cupola cliffs we passed the large cave used by the LORABADA people as a hiding place when they were attacked by the KUKUKUKUS many years ago.

On arriving in LAU village I found all the people already assembled and so started at once on the census.

LAU consists of 10 houses and has a total population of 60 persons.

By 9.30 a.m. I completed the census and moved on to the other LORABADA village of URIRI. I arrived here at 12.15 p.m. and as the people were all assembled ready I had lunch and at once started work.

This village is very clean and consists of 20 houses and has a population of 86 persons. Neither of the LORABADA villages is taxed at present.

Whilst I was taking the census A.C. IRIRI arrived with a letter from Kerema informing me of 14 labourers who had deserted from the dredge at Sunset. I at once sent IRIRI off to wait in SILO in case they tried to get past Kerema in the night on their way to the Delta Div.

If these natives tried to get back to the Delta Division they would have to come over the Cupola as it is the only possible route and IRIRI could easily apprehend them as they passed through SILO.

As soon as I had given IRIRI his orders I resumed the census work and by 3.45 p.m. had completed it.

Canoes were then obtained to take the gear and myself to Kerema. We left the village at 4.30 p.m. and arrived back at the Station at 5.30 p.m. when I at once reported to the R.M.

F.A. Bonsted P.O.

On this Patrol no carriers were compelled to carry.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

7 of 38/39

KEREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to
the Upper Vailala River District, for the purpose of
finding the where-about's of a KUKUKUKU people called the MOKA'A
and to extend the influence of the Government to these people.

Left Station on 17/10/38 Returned to Station on 4/11/38.

Number of Carriers employed 176 Number of Police taken Four

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Canoes, F.A. Bensted, P.O.

Villages visited UARIPI. MEI. KEURU. HERE-HERE. KEA-KEA. KOIALAHU. VAILALA E.
DOA. KAILAWA. HEWA. HUKARARA. NAKORO. LOHIKI. HEPA. KOIA. MGIWAKAPU.
WAIHEKI. PAKU. IOURI. IOMURITO.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8203/2.37.-1.633.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary
18th November 8

Date _____, 193_____

Nav
 Officer in charge of Station

N.B. After discovering that (Kukukuku) MOKA'A was in the Mandated Territory, the importance did not occur to the P.O., who knew he had crossed the tracks of R.M. Humphries (1926/27), and who still had sufficient supplies, of swinging north-westerly, over flat scrub land, very easy going, and examining the country watered by the Tsubu (or Arue) tributary of the Purari River, for natives (despite anything alleged to the contrary), and then striking back to his starting point. The underlying object of the patrol was to get in touch with native communities, if any, directly north or north-westerly of IOMURITO, to the boundary. There is still a large pocket in the north-west corner of the Division to be visited, and it was in the hands of the patrol to have got near there and obtained some data. The opportunity was unfortunately let slip, and nothing really achieved, beyond a routine patrol.

Nav
 R.M.G.D.
 18/11/38.

MINUTE PAPER

No.

Mr. P. O. Bensted.

Patrol.

Please make arrangements to leave the station early on Monday morning the 17th instant, for a patrol to MOKA'A, an unvisited Kukuluku tribe in from IOMURITO, at the head of the Vailala River. You will be away probably about 5 weeks. Accompanying you will be: A.Cs TURIAI, KAVARI, BERI and LUMA. The first two A.Cs come from the upper Vailala R.

I have sent A.C. BERI to Vailala East to have canoes ready for you for the up-river journey. Inspect all the river villages en route and pay (in salt) for annual upkeep. No rest house should be within 5 miles of the next rest house.

Take with you the census sheets of 1929 and at the villages of DOA, 31. KAILAWA, 32. HEWA, 35. HUKURARA, 36. HAKORO, 37. LOHIKI, 38. HEPA, 42. PAKU, 43. KEKE, revise them, going up stream. Coming down stream you should try and visit 41. WAIHEKI, 40. MOIWAKAPU, 39. KOIA, 34. URANOIA, 33. LURIA and do the same.

You will make your base at IOMURITO, where there is a (good) V.C. Ex-Local EBE-AUWE, who is now a V.C. at MOKA'A, informed me that his village can be reached in four days from IOMURITO. That would possibly mean 7-8 days for a loaded patrol. In 1926-27 Mr. R.M. Humphries essayed a patrol in from IOMURITO (it is supposed, as no patrol report of his can now be found, and returned there after a circuitous route without discovering, it is thought, many, or any, villages. He certainly never got to MOKA'A, your present objective. For your guidance I attach a sketch-map of the locality, drawn 1 mile to an inch scale. This will enable you to daily fix your position. Do not omit to take as many cross bearings as possible, both at midday and each night's camp. Although you may not be able to see places, the natives will be able to point where cert in places are. Do not rely on one native alone to do this, as he may be all at sea.

Be particularly careful about native names. Have the name-places split into syllables and do not yourself loudly and immediately re-pronounce a native name, else the natives may nod their heads and

indicate that you have got the word correctly, when the exact opposite may be the case. Pick out natives who speak and pronounce more clearly than others. In this respect you are required to compile a vocabulary both of the MAHIKAI and MOKA'A languages (forms herewith).

On your journeys, when you record the name of a village, state immediately after it, "(number) houses; (number, approx.) people", and chief, if any. Record the names of all the chief streams, and Mts.

V.C.EBE-AUWE promised that he would have a police recruit for Kerema. Endeavour to obtain a likely youth as a local, single.

Examine as much of the MOKA'A district as possible, but allowing yourself sufficient food to get back to IOMURITO. Ascertain whether there are any more tribes between MOKA'A and the boundary, and who they are and whether the populations are large or scanty, taking MOKA'A as a criterion.

When you are coming down the river obtain either at PAKU, or LOHIKI, some plantlets of the oil palm, introduced on the river many years ago. I require a few for Kerema. Have the roots well bound in bark, not leaves, and with plenty of soil attached to the roots.

You may pay LOHIKI and up-river natives who act as carriers with tobacco, 3 st. per diem, and the Vailala Village natives with cash at 6d per diem, payable at Kerema. Take certain trade lines with you for buying foodstuffs at MOKA'A.

When you arrive back at IOMURITO from MOKA'A you may let
TURIAI go on spell for two months in his village. Except for his sleep sulu, you should bring back to Kerema ALL of his kit.

R.M.G.D.

R.M.G.D.

11/10/38

Report of a Patrol by F.A. Bonsted, P.O., to the Upper Vailala District for the purpose finding the whereabouts of a KUSUKU people called the HOKA'A, and also to extend the influence of the Government to these people.

Monday 17th. October 1938.

In company with A. Co. KAIYARE and MIMA I left the Station at 10 a.m. to proceed to PINU-MEI village (V.C. MARARE).

A number of carriers had been told to bring canoes over from this village to the Station to enable me to transport the Patrol stores across the Lerema Basin. To do this five canoes and 25 carriers were used.

The canoes first proceeded to Totol Point where I dis-embarked and paid a visit to UARIPI village (V.C. MAI'E), whilst they carried on a and went round to MEI by the back water-way.

My reason for visiting UARIPI was for the purpose of making payments from the W.N.L.A/C. and to inspect the village.

I found the village to be clean and the Rest House and Barracks in a fair state of repair.

On leaving UARIPI I proceeded along the beach to MEI (V.C. MARARE) where I found that all the gear had arrived and had been carried up to the Rest House.

A few days previously A.C. TURIAI had been sent to the KEURU District to collect carriers and bring them to MEI. Carriers to the number of fifty four had been collected and were assembled at the Rest House. The canoe crews were paid off and the work of tying up the loads was at once commenced whilst I inspected the village.

The village was found to be clean and all houses in good repair as were the fences. All waterholes were fenced and the Barracks and Rest House were found to be in a fairly good state of repair.

Mr A.R.M. Rutledge, who was leaving on a Tax Patrol to the West, had left the Station about an hour after I had done so, and arrived at MEI at 3 p.m. He told me that he was having a little trouble with his hip and more than likely would have to stay over Tuesday in MEI and that it would be better for me to precede him along the beach to KEURU.

At 4 p.m. with the 54 carriers from KEURU and 16 from MEI I left and travelled along the beach as far as the Bluff Rest House where I intend to stop for the night. This rest house is only four miles from the MEI Rest House and is hardly ever used. It was found to be in a poor state of repair. The next Rest House is 7 miles further along the beach to the West and in normal circumstances is the first one used after leaving MEI. In my opinion the Rest House at the Bluff is hardly necessary as it is too close to Koroma for any person going west and when anyone is coming in to Koroma from the West they hardly ever stop here as it is only four miles to the end of their journey.

On this the first day of the Patrol 70 carriers were used and no one of that number refused and had to be compelled to carry.

Tuesday 18th. October 1938.

As the tide was high we had to wait until after 9 a.m. before we were able to get around the rocks at the foot of the Bluff to the West of the Rest House.

A call was made at HUIVA Plantation and then we proceeded to the KEURU Rest House.

Here the V.Cs of HEREMERE and KEURU arrived and reported. These two V.Cs. NAHUI and KAUAMO are two of the best to the West of Koroma.

The Rest House and Barracks were found to be in a good state of repair. The Rest House is old but with attention should be good for a few more years.

As Mr Rutledge had not arrived by 5 p.m. I made up my mind that I would proceed to Vailala in the morning as the waiting was using up too much food which I would more than likely need inland.

This day 70 carriers were used.

Wednesday 19th. October.

An early start was made and owing to the state of the tide quite a lot of time was lost in crossing KEURU Creek.

Soon after crossing the Creek Mr Howell and Mr Nolan from the S.D.A. Mission at Belopa were met.

On arriving at KEA-KEA village (V.C. HEVOR) the 16 MEI carriers were paid off and 16 KEA-KEA boys were recruited to replace them.

The Village was found to be in a good state of repair and clean. All water holes were fenced and the Rest House and Barracks were found to be

in good repair and clean.

On leaving KRA-KRA we continued along the beach to KOIALANU (V.C.HERAVI) and an hour later, at noon, arrived in VAILALA East village (V.C.KARAI). Here I found A.C.BERI, who had been sent ahead to get canoes, waiting for me with five canoes to be used in the trip up to IOMURITO.

The Rest House in VAILALA East is excellent and I found the village to be well fenced and clean with all waterholes protected from pollution from the village pigs.

Here all the carriers were paid off and on asking them if they wanted to be paid in cash or tobacco I was informed that they would rather be paid in tobacco as at the cash rate of 6d. per day they would only be able to buy two sticks of tobacco whereas if they were paid in tobacco they would receive three sticks of tobacco per day. I think that this will always be found to be the case where a carriers is only to receive one shilling or one shilling and sixpence for his services.

The rest of the afternoon was spent in recruiting 24 VAILALA East carrier for the trip up river and also in preparing the canoes and loads.

This day 86 carriers were used and none refused and had to be compelled to carry.

Thursday 20th. October. 1938.

During the night heavy rain fell and in the early hours of the morning it was noted that the Vailala River was in full flood. However an early start was made and by 7 a.m. we were well on our way. After passing Mr Drummond's Trading site at KARO-KARO only very slow progress was made owing to the strength of the current. By 11 a.m. we had only reached MAIRA Plantation and at 4 p.m. Camp was made in a few fishing shelters at a point about six miles above Maira and on the West bank of the river.

Friday 21st. October 1938.

An early start was made but owing to the current our progress was of course very slow. At 3.30 p.m. we had only travelled 12 miles and had reached AKAURA village. (V.C.KARAI)

I decided to camp in the Rest House here for the night and so the canoes were unloaded and all gear carried up out of the rain.

AKAURA is only a small village of 7 houses and is unfenced but was found to be very clean. The Rest House and barracks are situated on the other side of the river to the village and both were in fair repair. I ordered that part of the roof of the Rest House be repaired.

Saturday 22nd. October, 1938.

Another early start was made and by 10 a.m. we reached the village of BOA V.C.KARAI. This is a small village of 4 houses and a Dubu and was found to be unfenced but clean. Nearly all of the people were away on a trip to the Furari River and it was not known when they would be back. The Census of this village was revised and then we left for the village of KAILAPA (V.C.HAUWOKI) where we arrived soon after noon.

This is only a small village of 7 houses and is unfenced but is very clean and tidy. Here the Census was revised and then we carried on up the River to HEFA (V.C.HAUWOKI) where I decided to stop for the night in the Rest House.

This village consists of 13 houses and is also unfenced but was found to be clean. The Rest House and Barracks are on the opposite bank of the River and were found to be in good repair.

The revision of the Census occupied the rest of the afternoon.

On questioning the V.C. I found that he had accompanied Mr Humphries on a Patrol inland from IORUHITO in 1926/7 and he asked if he could come with me. I agreed that he should accompany the Patrol as it was possible that he would prove to be a useful man.

The payment for the upkeep of the Rest House and Barracks was made in salt, an item which these people prefer to tobacco. 24 carriers used.

Sunday 23rd. October, 1938.

We left HEFA at 6 a.m. and travelled three miles up the river when we reached the small village of HUKARARA (V.C.HAUWOKI) and here the Census was as well revised. This village is unfenced but clean and consists of five houses.

Travelling up-stream for about half a mile we reached the village of HAKORO which we found to be deserted. We were informed by V.C.HAUWOKI that the people had been away in the bush for over four months now. On leaving HAKORO we travelled steadily up stream and at 2.30 p.m. arrived at LOHIKI (V.C.EREHE).

This village is situated at the junction of the Vailala and Bahiti River and consists of 14 houses and is unfenced but clean.

The Barracks were found to be in a fair state but the Rest House was all broken and falling down. I ordered that repairs be carried out as the first Guba would blow the structure over.

The Census was revised and 10 carriers recruited.

Monday 24th. October 1938.

We left ICHIKI at 6 a.m. and proceeded upstream for about 4 miles to the village of HEPA (V.C. HEPA) where I revised the Census. There were only a few people in the village as the rest had gone off into the bush on a "walk-about". This is another unfenced village but is clean and has seven houses in it.

From HEPA we went on about four miles to the village of KOIA (V.C. HEPA) and here the Census was revised. This is only a very small village of three houses but is clean and tidy although unfenced.

After leaving KOIA we continued on to a point about a mile below the village of PAKU and here I left the canoe and went along the track to the village of WAHSEKI. I found the place to be deserted and it looked as though it had been for some little time. Most of these Vailala River people spend their time tramping between the Vailala and Fuzari Rivers. I at once hurried back to the canoe and proceed to PAKU (V.C. NAHEA). This village consists of 14 houses and is unfenced but clean. The Rest house and Barrack were found to be in excellent condition.

The Census was revised and 16 more carriers recruited for the trip inland from IOMURITO. This day 50 carriers were used.

Heavy rain fell during the night and the river rose about three feet.

Tuesday 25th. October. 1938

Owing to the strong current we did not make the progress I had hoped for and it was 11 a.m. before we reached the village of IOURI (V.C. HEU) about midway between the village of PAKU and the IVORI river.

This village is one of 10 houses, unfenced and situated on the East bank of the river. The Rest House and Barracks are on the opposite bank and I found them to be in fair condition except for a section of one of the walls which I ordered to be repaired.

The census was revised and we left immediately. At 2.30 p.m. we passed the IVORI Junction and continued on up the river until 4.30 p.m. when camp was made on the Eastern bank at a spot about five miles above the IVORI Junction. Heavy rain fell during the afternoon and evening.

Wednesday 26th. October. 1938.

After a very wet and uncomfortable night we made an early start and arrived at the rapids one and one half miles below IOMURITO at 11.30 a.m. At this point the long wire carried from Kerema was brought into action and all five canoes were quickly dragged over.

Once over this section of the river it was not long before we were in IOGURITO (V.C. ARAVA) only to find that the place was deserted and had been so for some time. A number of shots were fired to try and find out if there were any people in the gardens scattered about in the bush. This village consists of 8 houses and a Dubu, all in good repair. The Barracks and Rest House were in need of repair.

Just before 6 p.m. two men who said they had heard our shots came in to the village and on questioning them I found that the V.C. and some of the people were away in the bush to the east whilst the rest were away on the Murari River.

These two men said that they had been to the village of V.C. EBE)AUWE the KUKUKUKU V.C. and that they were willing to guide me there.

They said that it would take from six to eight days to get to the village and then from there on to the MOKA'A proper they believed that it would take another four days. This day 50 carriers were used.

Thursday 27th. October, 1938.

An early start was made and in the canoes we proceeded up IOVO Creek for a distance of $4\frac{1}{2}$ miles until we came to a creek flowing from the right. This was known as the SUIATU SA and here we drew the canoes up on a sand bank and unloaded them.

As soon as all the gear was unloaded the boys tied up the canoes and then started to tie up all the loads. By 10.30 a.m. we were on our way up the creek and followed it in a north easterly direction for a distance of about a mile. Here we left the creek and swung to the north up a hill. The crest of the hill was found to be at an elevation of 1200 ft above sea level according to the aneroid I was carrying.

The crest of this hill was followed for about a mile and then we started to descend to a river which I was told by the guides was called the SUIYAI SA. On reaching this river we travelled along it to the west and then to the north for about a half hour and then made camp.

Later I found that the hill to the south of us and the Plateau on which we stood was known as SIANAU KAU.

Soon after we made camp one of the carriers went down the river a short distance for a swim. He had not gone long before he came back calling out that there was a crocodile in a pool and that it had rushed at him whilst he was bathing. I made my way down to the pool and could see the crocodile lying on the bottom of the pool in 6ft of water.

The boys stirred it up with a pole and it came up close to the surface of the water and tried to swim away. I fired a number of shots at it but the bullets were deflected by the water and did no damage.

It was not long before the crocodile took refuge in a crevice between two rocks in the bottom of a 10 ft. deep pool of water.

No amount of prodding with poles would move it so at last one of the carriers from PAKU volunteered to go into the pool and put a noose round its tail. At first I refused to let him go but he said that some of his people were in the habit of doing this trick. As soon as I agreed to let him go he dived into the pool and swam down to the crocodile, approached it from behind and calmly lifted up its tail and passed a noose over and drew it tight. As soon as the boy appeared on the surface and climbed out of the pool the crocodile was pulled up on the bank and killed.

I was told by the carriers that this is by no means an uncommon occurrence with the Vailala River natives. I had never before heard of this being practiced in this end of the Territory but I had heard that it had been done somewhere East. This day 50 carriers were used.

This camp was situated at a point 5 1/2 miles to the North of IOMURITO.

Friday 28th. October, 1938.

During the early hours of the morning a terrific thunder storm took place and the river rose about 2 feet. We were able to cross at 6 a.m. by using an outcrop of slate as a series of stepping stones.

The track led us up a small creek to the north of the camp. This creek is known to the IOMURITO people as the KOIAN SA.

We followed the creek for about a quarter of a mile and then left it as it commenced to swing to the East.

Our course now lay in a generally north direction over an almost level Plateau with an elevation of 1700 ft. above sea level.

Geologically this Plateau is formed of Mudstone, slate and Tuff, with the slate predominating. The Plateau is well timbered and quite a lot of millable timber was noticed. It is regrettable that there is now way in which this timber could be brought out to the main Vailala River.

After walking for approximately four miles we arrived at a small creek known as the POI'S SA which is a branch of the SUNIYAI SA, and then followed up this creek for almost a mile before we made camp.

All this country as far as the SAHA SA is known as IOMURITO ground and these people look upon it as their hunting domain.

o.

Saturday 23rd. October 1929

A very early start was made and the LOI'S SA was followed to the north for over a mile before we left it and walked through the open scrub for three-quarters of a mile before we came to another creek flowing from the north. This creek which is also a tributary of the SUNIYAI SA is known as the MAMUHA SA.

This creek was followed for two miles before it too swung away towards the east. In this scrub country, which is almost level it is very hard to see any predominant land marks such as peaks in the Albert Range or in the Ranges across the Border in the Mandated Territory of New Guinea. On leaving the MAMUHA SA we travelled through the scrub for about half a mile and then found ourselves on the banks of a creek known also as the MAMUHA SA but this, instead of flowing into the SUNIYAI SA flows into the SEIHA SA to the north.

This creek is much larger than the previous one which we had followed and eventually, after 2 1/2 miles it brought us to the SEIHA SA.

The SEIHA SA is a fairly large stream and could be classed with the LOHIKI or DAHITI river to the south of the Allerts, for the amount of water which it carries. The bed of this river is composed of Tuff and slate, with slight traces of iron stone.

The crossing of the SEIHA SA was not difficult as we soon found a place where there were a lot of large boulders and we managed to cross on these.

On leaving the SEIHA SA we travelled for approximately two miles in a north easterly direction until we came to a small creek flowing from the north. Here I decided to make camp as I know from my mapping that we must be within about two miles of the border.

The creek on which camp was made is a tributary of the SEIHA SA and is known as the BABURI SA.

During the evening I questioned the guides and to my great dismay they informed me that it would take us two days hard walking to get to the village of the KUKUKU V.C. EBE-AUWE. This village, I was told, is the first of the KUKUKU villages of the MOKA'A and that the main MOKA'A villages are to be found four day's walk on from this village and over two Mountain Ranges. The first Range, on which is to be found the village of EBE-AUWE, is known as KORAI but my informants did not know the name

of the second Range to be crossed. They also said that the Main MOKA'A villages were situated in grass country, not grass of the type found on the upper Tandi but tall grass evidently of the type known as cane or elephant grass.

I endeavored to persuade the two guides to go on to see KBE-AU E and tell him to come in to me but they refused saying that they were frightened to go on alone as they were still not too friendly with the MOKA' and all their visits were done in fairly large parties.

According to the IOMURITO people the MOKA'A are entirely a primitive people and only possess half a dozen or so knives or axes traded to them by the IOMURITO people. This day 50 carriers were used.

Sunday 30th. October, 1938.

All the gear was left in the camp and with the guides and two A.Cs. I struck off to the North East, mapping carefully as I went, and continued on until I found from my map that I had crossed the Border.

From this point the guides informed me, it would take us until the middle of the afternoon of the second day to get to the village of KBE-AU E.

Again I tried to persuade them to go on but they refused saying that they were willing to accompany me but would not go on alone.

From here the 20 miles back to Camp was soon covered and all the gear was at once packed up and we moved off and made camp back on the north bank of the SENIA SA at 4 o'clock in the afternoon. This day 50 carriers used. Heavy rain fell during the afternoon and night.

Monday 31st. October 1938.

Camp was broken at 5 a.m. and our inward track was followed to the south. By 11 a.m. we had reached our No.3 Camp on the POI'O SA and I decided that after a rest and a meal we would go on to Camp No.1 on the SURIYAI SA and there spend the night.

At noon we moved off and by 4 p.m. we reached our Camp on the banks of the SURIYAI SA. No sooner had we made Camp than it commenced to rain heavily. This rain continued all night and toward the early hours of the morning the river commenced to rise rapidly. It is just as well that we had reached the South Bank of the SURIYAI SA when we did because I am certain that we never would have crossed it unless we had waited for at least a day for the river to fall. This day 50 carriers were used.

Tuesday 1st. November, 1938.

Tuesday 1st. November 1938.

At 5 a.m. camp was broken and two hours later we had all the gear over the hill and at the place on the KOIAU SA where we had left the canoes. The canoes were soon loaded and the trip down the creek to IOMURITO was commenced.

By 9.30 a.m. we had reached IOMURITO and there I found the V.C. ARAYU awaiting us. The morning was spent in giving orders to the V.C. in connection with the repair of the Rest House and Barracks and an order to the effect that when next the KURURURU V.C. KUM-AUM visited IOMURITO he was to be told to report at once to Kerema.

The village people were still away in the bush and the V.C. was uncertain as to when they were likely to return.

A.C. TURLAI who was to go on leave for two months starting from this date had all his gear checked over and packed up and left with his sleeping sulu and told that he could go for his "spell".

His village is near to McDowell Is. on the Purari River and it is possible for him to get from IOMURITO to his village in two days.

As the Vailala River was in full flood and the water running fast I left at 1.30 p.m. to "ride" the crest of the flood down to PAKU where I intended to stay the night.

PAKU (V.C. NALEBA) was reached just at dusk and all the gear was unloaded and carried up to the Rest House. All the carriers from PAKU were then paid off. During the evening I held a C.M.M. and one man of IOURI was sentenced to three months IMP. HL. for adultery.

This day 50 carriers were used.

Wednesday 2nd. November, 1938.

With the 54 Vailala East Carriers we left PAKU at 5.30 a.m. and went down stream to the village of HIRO or KOIA as it is now known.

From here I went inland for a short distance to the village of MOIWAKAPU (V.C. PEANA). Here I revised the Census and inspected the village.

This village was clear and unfenced and consisted of 4 houses and a small lulu.

On leaving the village I proceed back to the canoes and thence on down the river to LOHIKI. (V.C. ERUME).

Here the 10 LOHIKI carriers were paid off and then I held C.M.M. in which V.C. ERUME was sentenced to two months imprisonment for indecent assault.

All work attended to in the village the gear was at once loaded on to the canoes and we proceed down the river to HEWA.

Here I was informed by two Councillors whom I had seen on my way up river that the IURIA and URAVOIA people had not yet returned to their villages from the Iurari River.

I was able to go over the census sheets with these Councillors and register the deaths but as all the people were away the births are still unregistered.

Here the V.C. of HEWA was left after I had presented him with some tobacco for accompanying me in to the border, and in the early evening a fast run was made down the river to AKOURA (V.C. KARAI).

Here I camped in the rest house for the night and had all the gear prepared for an early start.

This day 34 carriers were used.

Thursday 3rd. November. 1938.

By 5 a.m. we were on our way down the river and after a fast trip with the current we arrived in VAILALA EAST at 9.30 a.m.

Here all the gear was unloaded from the canoes and another 30 carriers recruited from the village.

At 10.30 a.m. we set off along the beach and arrived in KEURU at 2.30 p.m.

Here the VAILALA boys were paid off and KEURU boys recruited for the trip to MHI village where I intended to spend the night.

A short pause was made at KUIVA Plantation to wait to allow the tide to fall sufficiently for us to get around the Fluff.

We arrived in MHI soon after dark and all the KEURU carriers were at once paid off as they wished to get back to their village as soon as possible. All gear was stacked in the rest house and a large canoe and 10 carriers ordered for the morning.

This day 64 carriers were used.

Friday 4th. November 1938.

All gear was loaded on to the canoe in the early morning and the trip to Kerema made by the back creek leading to MHI.

Kerema was reached at 10 a.m. and all gear unloaded and carried up on to the Station.

This day 10 carriers were used.

Individually
On this Patrol the total number of carriers engaged was 176 and of
this number no native refused and was obliged to carry.

F. O. Pensted P.O.

Mr. P.O. Beasted.

Patrol.

Please make arrangements to leave the station early on Monday morning the 17th instant, for a patrol to MOKA'A, an unvisited Kukukuku tribe in from IOMURITO, at the head of the Vailala River. You will be away probably about 5 weeks. Accompanying you will be: A.Cs TURIAI, KAVARI, BERI and LUMA. The first two A.Cs come from the upper Vailala R.

I have sent A.C. BERI to Vailala East to have canoes ready for you for the up-river journey. Inspect all the river villages en route and pay (in s. lt) for annual upkeep. No rest house should be within 5 miles of the next rest house.

Take with you the census sheets of 1929 and at the villages 30. of DOA, 31. KAILAWA, 32. HESA, 35. KUKURARA, 36. MAKORO, 37. LOHIKI, 38. HUPA, 42. PAKU, 43. KEKE, revise them, going up stream. Coming down stream you should try and visit 41. WRIHEKI, 40. MOIWAAPU, 39. KOIA, 34. URAVOI, 33. LUKIA and do the same.

You will make your base at IOMURITO, where there is a (good) V.C. Ex-Local EBE-AUWE, who is now a V.C. at MOKA'A, informed me that his village can be reached in four days from IOMURITO. That would possibly mean 7-8 days for a loaded patrol. In 1926/27 Mr. R.M. Hamphries essayed a patrol in from IOMURITO (it is supposed, as no patrol report of his can now be found) and returned there after a circuitous route without discovering, it is thought, many, or any, villages. He certainly never got to MOKA'A, your present objective. For your guidance I attach a sketch-map of the locality, drawn 1 mil to an inch scale. This will enable you to daily fix your position. Do not omit to take as many cross bearings as possible, both at midday and each night's camp. Although you may not be able to see places, the natives will be able to point where certain places are. Do not rely on one native alone to do this, as he may be all at sea.

Be particularly careful about native names. Have the names split into syllables and do not yourself loudly and immediately pronounce a native name, else the natives may nod their heads or

indicate that you have got the word correctly, when the exact opposite may be the case. Pick out natives who speak and pronounce more clearly than others. In this respect you are required to compile a vocabulary both of the HAINIKAI and MOKA'A languages (forms herewith).

On your journeys, when you record the name of a village, state immediately after it, "(number) houses; (number, approx.) people", and chief, if any. Record the names of all the chief streams, and Mts.

V.C. HBB-JUE promised that he would have a police recruit for Kerema. Endeavour to obtain a likely youth as a Local, single.

Examine as much of the MOKA'A district as possible, but allowing yourself sufficient food to get back to IOMURITO. Ascertain whether there are any more tribes between MOKA'A and the boundary, and who they are and whether the populations are large or scanty, taking MOKA'A as a criterion.

When you are coming down the river obtain either at PAKU, or LOHKKI, some plantlets of the oil palm, introduced on the river many years ago. I require a few for Kerema. Have the roots well bound in bark, not leaves, and with plenty of soil attached to the roots.

You may pay LOHKKI and up-river natives who act as carriers with tobacco, 3 st. per diem, and the Vailala Village natives with cash at 6d per diem, payable at Kerema. Take certain trade lines with you for buying foodstuffs at MOKA'A.

When you arrive back at IOMURITO from MOKA'A you may ^{let} A.C. TURIAI go on spell for two months in his village. Except for his sleep sulu, you should bring back to Kerema ALL of his kit.

Nav

H.K.G.D.

11/10/38

Kerema Station.

10th. October, 1938.

R.M.G.D.

Sir,

The following is a list of the stores, trade etc. which will be required for the forthcoming Patrol to the upper Vailala River:-

25/40 lb. tins of Rice.

500 lbs of dry Sago in 40 lb. oil bags.

20 tins of meat.

20 tins of fish.

20 lbs of sugar.

20 boxes of Matches.

5 lbs of soap.

2 gals of Kerosene.

1 lamp

2 buckets.

3 flies.

1 tent.

2 caddies of Tobacco.

6 scrub knives.

6 $\frac{1}{2}$ axes.

Trade.

6 10 in. knives.

6 12 in. knives.

6 8 in. knives.

6 tomahawks.

10 lbs beads.

12 small mirrors.

12 trade H/chiefs.

$\frac{1}{2}$ bolt turkey twill.

F. A. Bensted P.O.

Articles	Quantity taken on Patrol	QUANTITIES ISSUED AND VALUE					Returned			Remarks
		Police	Carriers	Others	Total Used	Government Cost				
Rice ...	1000	70	550		620	3	4	2	380	
W. MEAL ...	600	40	240		280	1	6	3	320	
Meat ...										
Sugar ...										
Tea ...										
Soap ...										
Tobacco ...	93	1	70	4	75	9	10	7 $\frac{1}{2}$	18	
Matches ...										
Kerosene...	2 gls.	1			1 gal.		1	8	1 gal.	
Tents ...										
Flies ...										
Lamps ...										
Buckets ...										
Kerosene Cans ...										
Knives and Sheaths										
Knives, 18 in. ...	6								6	
Knives, others ...	24								24	
Belts ...										
Pouches ...										
Print ...	$\frac{1}{2}$ blt.								$\frac{1}{2}$ blt.	
Twill ...										
Handkerchiefs ...	1 doz								1 doz.	
Beads ...	10 lb.								10 lb.	
Mirrors ...	12								12	
Axes ...										
Half Axes ...										
Tomahawks ...	12								12	
Carriers Pay as per Voucher.						9				
					Total £	23	2	8 $\frac{1}{2}$		

NOTE.—When an article such as a tent is issued, but is returned for future use, the value should not be entered.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

8 of 38/39

Kerema

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to
 the villages in the vicinity of Kerema Station for the purpose of
 the re-habilitation of IPISI villages and other work as stated in
 the body of the Report.

Left Station on Broken Periods *Not* Returned to Station on Broken Periods *Not*

Number of Carriers employed 26 Number of Police taken 2

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Station whaler and canoes, F.A. Bensted.

Villages visited KARAITA, IPISI, UARIPI, MEI.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8205/2.37.—1.033.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 2nd Dec, 1938

Bensted

Officer in charge of Station

Report of a Patrol By F.A. Bensted, P.O., to the villages adjacent to Kerema Station, for the purpose of General Inspection Etc.

Wednesday 9th. November, 1933.

I left the Station in company with C.I. MIRIA at 9 a.m. to visit the villages of KARAITA and IPISI (V.C. HEVAIRI).

On reaching IPISI I found the village in a filthy state, with coco-nut husks, palm fronds and pieces of wood strewn everywhere.

I at once ordered that the whole village be cleaned up and that the work was to start at once. It is evident from the state in which I found the village that the people have made no attempt to clean their village for many weeks.

On inspecting the village I gave an order that the following men should have their houses completed within one month from this date:-

IVAVU-ARIKI, HALAI-LELERE, VILAVAVA-ATEAVE, OREKAKARE-IRUE, IVAVU-IVAVUE, NOVELA-KAUTIA, ORI-NAVAE, KORAI-OLAPI, AITEHAO-NAIRI, PIFI-AIKETA, TURARAU-SEVESEAPO, HARO-SEVESRAPO,

All these men have commenced to build houses but, from what I know of the IPISI people it would be months in the ordinary course of events, before they completed them.

A rumour had been heard at Kerema that the water hole of the village was situated on an old burial site.

I gathered together the old men of the village and asked them to take me to the old burial ground. They did so and I found that the water-hole was in the centre of it. I ordered that this hole be filled in and a new one dug on the KARAITA side of the village and at a fair distance from the old burial ground.

The following old men of the village were given two months to build or get built for them, a new house:-

XOIAPI-MAURA, MROAISA-KAUTI, KAPORI-TOVU, KAKAITA-FARI, UARIFI-NIFI, and ELAPI-LELE.

On leaving the village of IPISI I proceeded back to KARAITA where I ordered that the bridge over the Creek be repaired immediately as it is in a state of collapse. In fact it is so rickety that I refused to attempt to walk over it, but was ferried across in a canoe.

Orders were given that the Rest House was to be put in order and a new kitchen and small house built, whilst the grass and rubbish was to be cleared away from the vicinity.

Friday 11th. November, 1938.

During the afternoon another visit was paid to IPISI to see if the work ordered to be started on Wednesday had been commenced.

I found that the village had been cleared of all rubbish and had been freshly swept and new sand spread in front of almost every house in the village. The work on the new houses was going ahead very well and those men ordered to build new dwelling were already cutting the timber with which to build them.

The IPISI natives are very temperamental and unless they are watched all the time they soon lose interest in any work they are ordered to do. I am certain that quite a number of these natives would cut the timber for their houses and then declare a holiday and then go no further with the building.

I found that the people were still arguing about the new water hole as they were not keen to give the old one up and go another few hundred yards for their water.

I explained to them again about the danger of drinking contaminated water and this time they seemed to see the point and at once set to clearing the site for the new hole.

The "Company Plantations" belonging to the IPISI and KARAITA natives were inspected and I found that the coconuts were all healthy and were growing well. The fences were in good repair but the natives had allowed quite a lot of second growth saplings to spring up. I ordered these to be cleared away and that the place be kept clear of any growth of this nature. The IPISI natives had also planted Bananas in their Plantation so I pointed out to them that this was a bad crop to put in with young coconuts as they took too much of the Nutriment out of the ground and would so retard the growth of the young coconuts.

On the other hand the KARAITA people have planted sweet potatoes between the rows of coconuts in their Plantation and this cover crop should be of great benefit to the young palms.

On returning to KARAITA I inspected the bridge over the ORO MA Creek and found that the KARAITA people had completed their section of it but so far the IPISI people had not touched their section. This is understandable as so many of the people are at present engaged in other work such as cutting timber for the new houses.

In Karaita Village the work ordered to be done on the Rest House was well under way and the people informed me that they would complete it by noon on Monday.

These KARAITA people are much more willing workers than those at IPISI as they start on a job at once and go ahead until it is completed.

Sunday 13th. November, 1938.

In company with A.C.KAIVARE and 9 prisoners as crew I left the Station at 7.30 in the Whaler to pay a visit to the Jail Garden at MURUA.

The trip up occupied 3 hours and on arriving at the Garden A.C.MANAI and Warder HAREMO reported that all was well.

An inspection of the work done since the last visit was carried out. Quite a large area of sweet potatoes had been planted and the large Banana patch to the western side of the garden area had been cleared and planted with pumpkins. At present there are only a few vegetables being sent down to Kerema but as soon as the potatoes commence bearing this should be greatly changed.

An inspection and roll call of the prisoners was made and three of the MURUA prisoners changed with three of the prisoners whom I had brought up from Kerema.

A quantity of Bananas was loaded into the whaler and the trip back to Kerema started at 12.30 p.m.

Kerema was reached soon after 3 p.m. after a good trip down with the tide.

Thursday 17th. November.

During the Morning a visit was paid to the small village of PETOI on Petoi Point opposite the Station.

This village is supposed to be under the care of V.C.MARARE of UARIPI but in my opinion he takes very little notice of it.

The following men were ordered to build new houses within one month and to do away with the old structures:- TAU-MAURI, SIORI-MAI'I, KAVE-MAURI, ELAU-NAVAIA, KARI-MAURI, BUASA-MAURI, HARUA-HASU, KEAPORA-KIRAKA and Ferryman TARIEMA of PETOI.

Nearly all of these men have already cut the timbers for new houses as they had heard that the IPISI natives were ordered to re-build in a number of places.

Monday 21st. November, 1958.

During the morning another visit was paid to IPISI village in company with C. I. MIRIA.

I found that the village people had dug three new water Holes; one in the place I had marked out for them, one on the seaward side of IPISI Point and the other to the South East of the village. In this way the whole village is now obtaining a good supply of water, without any one section of the people having to walk any great distance for it.

All holes were fenced off from pigs and dogs and on tasting the water I found it to be of a fair average quality. It must be remembered that with a village like IPISI with salt water bounding it on three sides it is only to be expected that the water should be slightly brackish.

The work of erecting the new houses ordered to be built on the 9th. inst. was going ahead very well and I might say here that the whole village was in a state of activity with the men building and the smaller boys carrying timbers whilst the women of the village were busy sweeping up the rubbish inside the village area.

A visit was paid to the "Company Plantations" belonging to IPISI and KARAITA but I found that these had not been cleaned as yet. It was explained to me that all the people were too busy on the other tasks I had set them to be able to clean up the plantation at once and as I could see that they had been very busy I said nothing except to warn them that the plantations must be cleaned as soon as possible.

The bridge over the creek near to KARAITA village has been repaired in a half hearted way and orders were issued that this work must be done thoroughly as it is only a matter of replacing two piles which have become rotten.

The Rest House in KARAITA village has been put in good order and a new kitchen and small house built and the place cleared of weeds and rubbish. The building of new houses in KARAITA is going ahead very fast indeed and the people seem to be making quite a good job of the buildings.

Friday 25th. November.

At 10.45 a.m. I left the Station in a large village canoe with the KARAITA ferryman and four village boys to take soundings of the Kerema Bay during a period of one hour before and after high water. Quite a large number of soundings were taken between the Station and Petoi Point and between Petoi Point and the Anchorage off of Mrs Friddles Trade store. From here a series of soundings were taken to Ipsi Point and then back along the channel to the Anchorage at Kerema. A second series of soundings was taken along the shallow patch in the centre of the bay. This patch was found to start at the Western side of the Matupi River mouth and to extend almost to the anchorage at Petoi. On returning a series of soundings was taken from the middle of this patch to the shore between Ipsi Point and Kerema and thence back to Kerema.

By this time the tide had fallen considerably and I returned to the station to plot the soundings on the chart of Kerema Bay.

Saturday 26th. November.

In company with A.C. ABAIA and ten prisoners I left Kerema in the station whaler for the Murua gardens at 7.30 a.m.

The object of the visit was for the issue of rations and an inspection of the prisoners and the work carried out.

A quick trip of an hour and fifty five minutes up was made and on arrival A.C. MANAI and Warder HAREHO reported.

All prisoners were found to be well and the amount of work carried out since my last visit quite satisfactory. One prisoner was changed by a boy from the crew of the whaler as his time expired.

At the garden at present there is quite a large area of sweet potatoes planted and I brought back two copra sacks full to Kerema. The bananas and pumpkins are bearing well and a fair quantity of these were also brought in. A.C. MANAI reported that after Mr Pratt and Mr McKinnon had passed on Thursday four KUKUKURUS had come in to the garden and after eating a little sago had departed. He said that they were Kaverope natives but was unable to learn from which village they had come.

In my opinion a strict watch will have to be kept from now on to prevent pigs from ruining the garden as it is quite unfenced and so unprotected from the depredations of these animals which can do an enormous amount of damage to a garden in one night.

At noon I made my departure from Larua and proceeded to the mouth of the Matupi River where soundings were made from both Points to the whaler anchorage at Kerema.

The Matupi carries a large volume of water and the scouring effect of this has formed a channel varying from 4 to 6 fathoms in depth.

The average depth in the river itself is about five fathoms and as it is almost clear of floating timber it would make an ideal landing place for sea-planes during any heavy North West blow which would render the Bay quite choppy and dangerous. In the Matupi a plane is assured of a good runway of at least a mile and a half with an average width of almost half a mile.

Monday 28th. November.

At 2 p.m. a canoe and three carriers were obtained from KARAITA village and I set out to do more soundings of the Bay.

Owing to the strong wind which was blowing I was unable to go out as far as I wished in the direction of the passage through the bar near to MEI village, but quite a large number of soundings was taken between IPISI point and the anchorage at Peto. At one point in the middle of the Bay there is only from a half to three quarters of a fathom of water at high tide, and although this patch is quite small its position makes it dangerous to navigation.

From the soundings I have taken it is evident that any vessel wishing to make the anchorage at Kerema must, on crossing the bar at MEI, come in on a course almost direct for IPISI Point and thence close in along the shore line to the anchorage.

At 4 p.m. I had to give up taking the soundings as the water was getting too rough and it was taking the crew all their time to keep the canoe afloat.

A visit was paid to Mr and Mrs Baker's at Peto to see if Mr Baker had improved in health but I was told that he was still very ill.

I returned to the Station at 5.30 p.m. and the soundings were at once plotted on to the chart of the Bay.

Tuesday 29th. November.

At 9 a.m. in company with C.I. MIRIA I left the Station and proceeded to the villages of MEI and UARIFI for the purpose of collecting carriers for the KUKUKURU Patrol on which I am starting on or about Monday 5th. December.

Practically all the taxable natives from both villages were away in the bush making new gardens but I was able to select 15 boys from UARIPI and another 15 from MBI. These natives were ordered to report at Kerema on the afternoon of Sunday 4th. December to be in readiness for an early start on the Monday morning.

Both the villages of UARIPI and MBI were found to be clean and in a fairly good state of repair; with all waterholes clean and well fenced from the village pigs and dogs.

At 2 p.m. I returned to the Station and reported to the R.M.

Wednesday 30th. November.

On Tuesday evening Mr Vivian and myself had discussed the possibility of establishing a look-out on the top of the Cupola as from this point one should be able to see for an enormous distance both up and down the coast.

It was with this in view that I left the Station at 6.30 a.m. attended by my personal servant to climb to the top of the Cupola and see if it would be possible to establish a look-out there.

I found the highest point to be at an elevation of 800 ft above sea level and at a distance of 4 1/2 miles from Kerema.

Unfortunately this point was so over grown with bamboo clumps that I was unable to see for any great distance in any direction, but it would only take a team of say ten prisoners, a few hours to clear off the whole top of the hill and thus allow one to see for a great distance in almost any direction.

At this point there stands a very tall Irimo tree and I personally have noted it and taken bearings on it from the top of the Albert Mountains about 26 miles away.

If at any time, and I am sure that time will come, there are numerous light houses on this coast it is certain that one will be erected on this point as it can be seen from as far east as Kairuku and as far west as Oroko. I walked both up and down the ridge in the hope of finding a better spot but I was unsuccessful.

On my way back to the Station I took bearings from the old building in the Government Rubber Plantation and so was able to fix its position on the map when I arrived back at Kerema. The elevation of this building is 400 ft. above sea level. I arrived back at Kerema at 11 a.m. and reported to the R.M.

Thursday December 1st, 1938.

In company with C.I. MIRIA I again visited IPISI village during the morning.

On arriving in the village I found it to be quite clean and tidy; quite a change from its usual condition.

On inspecting all the new houses in the course of erection I found that not one of them was more than half finished. I questioned the people as to why so little progress had been made since my last visit and I was told that since I last visited them they had been very busy building two churches; one in KARAITA and one in IPISI. I then asked them if they knew how much time they had left to complete their own houses to be within the time given in my orders. To this they replied that they had eight days.

It is a pity that these people do not attend more to their own well-fare and carry out the orders issued by Government officers instead of attending to work to which there is no time limit or penalty attached. As I will be leaving on Patrol on Monday or Tuesday and do not expect to be back here before about the 25th. of December, I gave the IPISI and KARAITA people an extension of time until the 1st of January to get their houses completed. After this date they will be shown no leniency whatever as it will mean that they have seven weeks instead of four in which to build.

On completing the work in the village I proceeded to the "company" coconut plantation. I found that the work of cleaning had been started but was not yet complete. A count of the coconuts owned by each man in the "company" was taken and then I left and carried out the same work in the KARAITA plantation. The KARAITA plantation was found to be in a much better state than was that of IPISI as the natives had planted a cover crop of sweet potatoes.

My return to the Station was made at noon and I reported at once to the R.M. and informed him of the action I had taken in regard to the time extension.

G. A. Bessie P.O.
2/12/38.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

10 3/39

K R E M A STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by G. W. Toogood, P.O. to
Eastern Boundary & Tiveri Police Camp, and KOVIO. for the purpose of
General Inspection of Villages, Plantations and Native Labour
Inspections/

Left Station on 3rd October, 1938. Returned to Station on 21st December, 1938.

Number of Carriers employed 343 Number of Police taken Four

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge -

Villages visited SILLO, KALAMA, UAMAI, KOARU, IRETIYU, HABUHABU, TAVAFURU,
KUKIPI, MOTU MOTU, LES, BIARU, IOKKA, SAROTA, CIAPU, MOVLAVI, POPO,
ECRATA, SAVAIVILI, KANPAW, and KAPUI.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8215/2.37.-1.055.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 19th Jan'y, 1939

Nariman
 Officer in charge of Station

Page 4 Vide E-S letter 325/165/39 of the
 8/2/39 re 'Fencing villages'

Mr. P. O. Toogood.

You will please arrange to leave the station on Wednesday morning the 28th instant to conduct a patrol to the coastal villages East, to Tiveri Police Camp (including native labour inspections) and to the KOVIO villages, in that order.

The route should be: coastwise to the Eastern boundary then when you get back to Kukipi engage canoes to take you up the Lakekamu River to Tiveri Police Camp. En route, alight at Olipai and visit Tiveri Gold Dredge and Bethune's mining camps, making the necessary N/L inspections. Ascertain from both what rations the Government owes for issue to A.C. mining guard. Change A.C. guards (2). Go on to the Police Camp, where see that everything is in order. Take stock of ALL government property, including rations. Visit Garbutt's camp, inspect N/L and change guard. On return to Camp replace rations issued by Garbutt to A.C. Guard. Before leaving change the 2 A.C.s, the position then being:

From Kerema: A.Cs DOMAMASI, BOBI, IADAMA, KADA, KURUMIA. C.I. ~~HEHEHEHE~~ ??
To Kerema: A.Cs ELIJAH, NOIRUE, HALLA, KOTO, WARABU. C.I. ~~HEHEHEHE~~ ??

A.C. DOMAMASI, having a knowledge of writing and reading will always remain at the Police Camp and see (by keeping a record in writing) that each and every month the remaining A.Cs are changed about.

The two long-sentence prisoners will remain unchanged. (Take with you 2 doz packets salts, 1/2 bot. Totaguina, 1 bot. liniment, 1 bot. Iodine, 1 tin sulphur oint., small quantity of wool and lint, and 1 doz bandages for the medical chest at the Camp). Also two good blankets and two sihis for the prisoners.

I should have mentioned that it will be necessary for you to take up stream with you, say, 12 natives not only for canoe crews but for carrying. See that you select natives who have not carried on any of the Tauri patrols a few months ago.

You will then go down stream to Urulau (Rest House) and from there proceed to the KOVIO villages (sketch plan herewith). An ex-V.C. there requires to be paid his screw. Returning to Urulau you go down stream to Olipai, from where you will send in A.C. rations to T.C.D. be replaced. After that descend to Moviavi (paying Terapo Mission a courtesy visit) and to Kukipi, to pick up the coastal patrol, to Kerema

The purposes of your coastal patrol will be:
Paying of monies out of W.N.L.A/c. (Particulars herewith). Only those natives to whom monies are due can be paid, nobody else.
Inspection and where necessary correction of: Coconut plantations, houses, villages, roads, wells (in every case to be fenced in and trees planted around for shade), cemeteries, bridges, village fences and, of course, rest houses and A.C. barracks.
Payment of prize to Kukipi for best kept plantation. (Take tools with you)
Pumps (take one complete set with you, with necessary installing tools)
In order to accustom yourself with the Native Regulations take with you a copy of the Ordinance. And a copy of N/L Ordinance.

All matters dealt with should be in written form, each Minute being attached to its own file of papers. Reporting in the bulk is to be deprecated.

Take with you a caddy of tobacco, 2 doz. meat, 2 doz. fish, 24 lbs sugar, 24 boxes matches, 2 gals kerosene, billycan. On no account must Tiveri P.C. rations be used by the patrol.

You should be provided with the following:
Official receipt book. Tax receipt book (but the native can produce his last tax -

Envelopes. Pencils. Ink. Blotting paper. Manifold paper. Sealing wax.
Gun. Eraser. Pen. 20 Contract of Service forms. 10 statement forms.
40 Note of Contract of Service forms. Government of Papua Rept forms.
(100)

You should have your own despatch box for papers and monies.
Use a station despatch box to hold the meats, fish, matches and tobacco.

On Monday morning you should send for the IPISI V.C. and tell him you
want so many villagers at Kerema on Wednesday 7 a.m. to carry you to
SILO.

Your procedure should be as follows: Proceed straight to the boundary
(OIAPU); en route, at all the rest houses, informing the people what
is the purpose of the patrol, and that no excuses will be received
if on your return matters have not been given attention.

For an interpreter, to accompany you throughout the patrol, I hardly
know what to advise. A former temporary interpreter is now a student
at Moru Mission. Perhaps Mr. Nixon could let you have his services,
for the time being, if he is willing. Or another likely native at
the Mission may be offering. A suitable man would be paid £1 p.m.
Police interpreting is too awful to contemplate.

Rad

R.M.G.D.

24/9/38.

PATROL REPORT

to

EASTERN BOUNDARY AND TIVIRI POLICE CAMP

OFFICER: G. W. Toogood, P.O.

ON: 3rd October, 1938.

On the instructions received from the R.M.G.D. I left Kerema Station at 10.30 a.m. on the morning of the 3rd October, 1938, with A.C's. DOMMASI, BOBI, UDAMA, KADA, KURUWIA and emergency interpreter SARA, together with forty-one Carriers from the villages of UARIPI and MAI, and proceeded over the CUPOLA to the beach. The road over the Cupola was in good condition, especially in view of the rain, which was coming down steadily, except at one place where a large tree had recently fallen over the track, completely blocking it. Upon reaching the beach the LAURABADA village Councillor was sent for and instructed to get the tree cleared away.

The first village encountered was TEREMA, a small village consisting of 5 houses, it is the first of the Silo Group, a pleasantly situated little village built by the side of a small stream, it is clean, well fenced and tidy.

The second village was IBOISU, also of the Silo Group, and similarly situated to Terema, it was also clean and in good order.

SILO. V.C. BIRAHUA.

32 Houses.

Arriving at this village two and a half hours after leaving Kerema I made an inspection of the village with the V.C. and found it to be in good, clean order, and the Rest House and Barracks well fenced and in a good state of preservation. Made an order that certain work was to be done on the Silo end of the road over the Cupola. Paid off the UARIPI and MAI carriers and enlisted the services of Silo natives as carriers, and proceeded to:

AIKABULUKA.

27 Houses.

This village is divided into two No. 1 & 2, both being very well fenced and particularly clean and tidy. The village is situated about six feet above the beach and tide erosion does little damage. These people are really very well placed as there is an abundance of Sago just behind the village.

IVAU'U. V.C. NAVAL.

14 Houses.

This village was found to be clean and in good order, as the village is built on raised ground, about six feet above the beach, there is little or no damage through tide erosion, a well built fence surrounds the area, and the V.C. seems to be keen on the job.

IVEFIRU. Cnclr. BIAREA.

15 Houses.

The Councillor at this village seems to be quite proud of it, the Houses are well built, decently spaced and there is one new house in the course of construction, the village is well fenced and little erosion damage is in evidence.

UMAI GROUP.

LALABU. Cnclr. ASEREA.

26 Houses & 9 Houses.

This village is built in two separate areas, both being clean and tidy, the first half consisting of 9 houses; with one under construction; is well fenced and in good order, but in regard to the second section the village Councillor reports that a recent heavy sea demolished the fence and caused slight damage to some of the houses. The village was ordered to be refenced before my return, and one house; which was considered unsafe; was ordered to be rebuilt further back from the sea.

IROPE

6 Houses.

This village is built on the western bank of Umai Creek, when inspected it was dirty and untidy, with half the fence broken down. Village people instructed to clean village and re-fence before my return.

PARAKAU. OASAREA - V.C.

24 Houses.

Considering the size of this village it is particularly clean, tidy and well fenced. It lies over a large area, the main section of the village is on the south-eastern side of the eastern arm of Umai Creek and consists of 60 Houses, whilst the other 34 Houses are spread out along the sand flats on the inland side of the creek. The Rest House and Barracks are well fenced and in good condition, with the exception of the Rest House Kitchen, which owing to its exposed position to the South-east winds, has a decided list to Port, the V.C. was instructed to rectify this error. The Silo Carriers were paid off here, and as it was after the hour of five, the night was spent at the Rest House.

POHARA.11 Houses.

Village clean and in good order, Sou-east season has caused damage to the fence. Instructed to repair fence before my return.

NOKUOVO. V.C. KARU.16 Houses.

This village was clean and tidy, houses all in good order except one belonging to SIAIA, he was instructed to rebuild. Area well fenced. V.C. instructed to clear away the Flotsam and Jetsam deposited by the tide along the foreshore in front of the village, as the odour was rather oppressive.

MA'ARU.10 Houses.

No fault could be found with this village, it was clean, fenced and tidy, with all houses in a good state of repair.

MORA'A. Onclr. ERIARU.22 Houses.

Owing to the amount of damage caused each year by the encroaching tide, during the Sou-east season, a general meeting of the village was called, and they were advised to commence to build their village further inland, as in two or three years from now the present site will be under water. Instructions given that three houses rendered unsafe through the erosion, are to be rebuilt within three months. Work ordered to be done on the UAMAI section of the UAMAI-KARAMA road.

KARAMA GROUP.

Received a complaint from Mr. W. Field; who's native built residence is situated about half a mile west of the first of the Karama villages; to the effect that several people from the Karama Villages have built houses close to his, and that their Dogs and Pigs are allowed to run freely around the surrounding country, causing him much inconvenience by breaking down fences and tearing up his garden. As the people in question were away from home, I assured Mr. Field that I should investigate the matter thoroughly upon my return, and that in the meanwhile the matter would be put before the Village Constable at Karama.

KEREMA.5 Houses.

This is a small village on the point at the mouth of Karama Creek. very clean. tidy and well fenced.

<u>PARAKOU.</u>	<u>Cnclr. HAVIAMI.</u>	<u>29 Houses.</u>
<u>KIOVIARAFI.</u>	<u>V.C. MAIKO.</u>	<u>13 Houses.</u>
<u>IVARIKA.</u>	<u>Cnclr. OTEROI.</u>	<u>14 Houses.</u>
<u>KEREVA.</u>		<u>22 Houses.</u>
<u>NAUKIAVA.</u>		<u>19 Houses.</u>

It was impossible to inspect these villages in their present condition, the five villages are all together, just one running into the next, they are filthy dirty, untidy and not a scrap of fence is standing from one end to the other, the whole area looking and smelling little better than a rubbish tip. The V.C. when questioned regarding the state of his villages replied that when he gave an order, the people would tell him that he was not the boss and that they would do as they liked. He was therefore told to take a note of the name of every man who refused to carry out his orders, and to submit them to me on my return. He was also ordered to have all the villages cleaned and completely re-fenced before my return. An assembly of the village people was then called and they were told that unless the whole village was clean and tidy upon my return and they obeyed the orders of the V.C., the offenders would be punished. The only excuse offered by the people was that two or three men of the village had died recently, that having sort of disorganized the community.

NAVIAVIOPATEIA. Cnclrs. ELAI & MIAUNE. 21 Houses.

This village is well fenced, clean and orderly, a distinct example to the other Karana Villages.

MOROI.

This village is now non-existent, the people having moved further inland, forming two new villages named KEARI and OFASA.

KEARI. V.C. NOVO. 18 Houses.

All the houses in this village are comparatively new, it is well fenced, clean and quite nicely laid out, it is also very sensibly situated, about 5 chains from the beach, therefore safe from erosion by the tide for many years.

OFASA. Cnclr. OIEVE. 23 Houses.

Like the previous village this is prettily situated back from the beach, is neatly built, clean, tidy and well fenced. The inhabitants of both these villages are apparently taking an inter-

IVAFIRU.12 Houses.

This village although suffering somewhat from the effects of the South-east Winds and Tides, is clean and the fence as presentable as could be expected.

KAIVIPI-PUKARI. Cnclr. LAIKA.13 Houses.

Village clean and orderly, new fences in course of construction, old one having recently been carried away by heavy seas.

ARU. Cnclr. KAKO.15 Houses.

This village when inspected was in good order, being clean well fenced and tidy, with all houses in sound condition. As this village is built on ground about six feet above the beach level, it is not bothered much by the heavy seas.

URU. Cnclr. IVAMAU.20 Houses.

This village which is situated about 100 yds. east of Aru, is likewise clean and well fenced, with houses all soundly built.

ERAVA.15 Houses.

There were no faults to find with this village, as it was well fenced, clean and orderly.

KOARU. V.C. FOROMA.42 Houses.

This is one of the best kept villages on this section of the coast, being spotlessly clean and tidy, with a good fence around, the Rest House and Barracks are in good condition and showing no signs of village native inhabitation, as many of the other Rest Houses along the coast do. The V.C. appears to be a capable fellow and keen on his job. A few W.N.L. payments were made here and a village meeting was called, when the people were told that complaints had been received from Mr. F. Clark, to the effect that on occasions when he has required casual labour for a few days, he has been unable to get the Koaru natives to help him, owing to their disinclination to work. Asked why this was, they replied that they had no reason, and that they sometimes did work for him (Mr. Clark) but sometimes they did not want to work. It was then pointed out to them that everyone in this country was out to help one another, for the more work done meant more money earned, thereby putting that much more money into circulation, and making the country more prosperous for all concerned. The idea seemed to sink home and all agreed to assist in future when required. Arriving at Mr. Clark's

residence, which is situated about 300 yds. from Koaru Village, I was informed by his House-boy that he had gone to KUKUPI to meet the M.V. "Ronald S", so proceeded to LELIFIRU.

Encountered the 14 natives who deserted from The Tiviri Gold Dredging Co., at Sunset, at Lelifiru, they were heading for Kerema to see the Government, so I asked them what their trouble was, they said that their food was no good at Sunset, so I advised them that they would have to return to Sunset, and that I should investigate the complaint. So leaving three A.C.'s. at the Barracks at Lelifiru in charge of most of the gear, I proceeded to Kukipi, with A.C. DOMANASI and the fourteen deserters, as I had heard that Mr. R. Clegg, who is employed by the T.G.D. Company, was still at Kukipi and returning up river the following day. Arriving at Kukipi at about 6.0 p.m., I met Mr. Clegg who was preparing to proceed to Kerema after the deserters, however as he did not wish to lay a charge against them, having had no trouble before, and the natives also being willing to return without any more fuss, so long as the Government was going to make an inspection soon, it was decided that they should return with Mr. Clegg by launch the following day, after then having been assured that I should be making an inspection within a fortnight at Sunset. The "Ronald S" was at anchor at Kukipi, on board were Mrs. F. A. Bensted and Mr. A.R.M. Rutledge, both bound for Kerema. Remained the night at Kukipi.

Wednesday, 5th October.

Left Kukipi at 8.0 a.m. and returned to Lelifiru, where it was found that A.C. KURUWIA, who had been sent back from Silo to Kerema to bring on the Rice for A.C. rations, had arrived with Ten 40 lb. tins of Rice.

A meeting was then called of all the LELIFIRU people, for the discussion as to the site for the new village. The position was first explained to them that the present site of the village was becoming more and more uninhabitable, and that it was imperative that a new site be decided upon at once, so that building operations could be proceeded with. After the discussion had been raging solidly for three and a half hours, I informed the people I would leave them to it, and that I should expect their decision on the morrow when I should be returning. Leaving four of the A.C.'s. in charge of the gear at Lelifiru, I proceeded with A.C. DOMANASI and Interpreter SARA back

essary to hold a Labour Inspection in view of the fact that Mr. Clark has only six natives in his employ, One in a store at Kukipi, another working on his Launch on the LAKEKARU River, and of the four at the Plantation one is a Cook-boy and another the House-boy, leaving only two on the Plantation, so just a cursory inspection was held.

Asked if they had any complaints to make all the natives except one said that they had no complaints at all, that they had plenty of food and that they were quite satisfied with the work. The exception complained that he didn't get enough food and that the work was too hard. upon enquiry from the other natives, it was learnt that this native sometimes did not get any food, but that the same food as they got was always there for him, the trouble being that he usually finished the work he was set in the morning by about 2.0 p.m., then without returning to the house he was in the habit of clearing off to his village, which is close by (KOARU), and not returning until the next morning, thereby missing the ration issue at 5.0 p.m. Mr. Clark upon being asked if this was the case, agreed that it was so, and said that he had quite a bit of trouble with the native in question, as he was always running off to his village, sometimes before he had completed his work. The native was told that in future he was to report to Mr. Clark each day at 5.0 p.m., and by so doing the complaints of both parties should be adjusted. Everything else was in order, good living quarters and water, and an adequate medicine chest, infact conditions for these employees appear to be much better than the conditions on the majority of Plantations.

As it was too late to return to Lolifiru, the night was spent as the guest of Mr. Clark.

Thursday, 6th October.

Left Mr. Clarke's residence at 8.0 a.m. and returned to Lolifiru, where it was found that the village people had decided on a site for the new village.

LELIFIRU. V.C. MAITESA. 65 Houses.

This village is very badly wind and sea swept, hence it is dirty, untidy and far from odoriferous to the nose, however as the inhabitants are aware that this state of the village is unhealthy, and that they are anxious to scrap the village and build a new one as soon as they can decide on the site, it is best to await and encourage

Proceeded up the NEPORO River to the site decided upon by the LELIFIRU people for their new village, it is apparently a good site, about 50 yds. in from the river and adjoining the Company Plantation, it is a considerable distance from the present village, and is not likely to be troubled by the elements for some years.

After a thorough investigation of the surrounding land, I informed the people that I thought it an excellent situation for the new village, and that I expected to see it well on the way to being built by the time I return. Returned to Lelifiru by the land track.

Engaged 5B natives as Carriers and sent them on to KUKIPI in charge of four A.C.'s, and proceeded to HABU HABU with one A.C. and the Interpreter.

HABU HABU. No V.C. or Cnlrs. all resigned. 54 Houses.

Very little can be said about this Village, if such it can be called, as it is merely a collection of dilapidated houses on a wind and sea swept strip of sand, it is consequently dirty, untidy, practically un-fenced and possesses a highly unpleasant odour, the area must be condemned as a village site unless the people move at once. A meeting was called here of all the Habu Habu people to decide where the site for the new village should be. After many hours of haggling and visiting 'en masse' the various areas suggested, it was decided that a suitable site would be about half a mile west of the present village, close to TAVAFURU. The people were then given until my return to have cleared the new area and commenced building. It is to be hoped that something is done this time, as the arguing as to a suitable site has been going on for many months, dynamite would undoubtedly be the easiest way of shifting the people.

TAVAFURU. Cnlrs. KARAFU & KARUKA. 20 Houses.

This village although better situated than the last two villages, is never-the-less in danger of a wash-away in the near future, as even now heavy seas frequently sweep the village. The position was explained to the people, who are of the right frame of mind and are keen to move, and have infact already selected the site for the new village, it is a solid area of land further inland and a little further east of the present village, the new site would practically adjoin the new HABU HABU site. The area was visited and approved of, and the people were informed that I hoped to see the construction of their new village well advanced by my return.

Crossed over straight to KAILAPI, arriving there at about 6.0 p.m., accepted the kind invitation to spend the night with the staff of Oil Search Ltd.

Friday, 7th October.

Torrential rain delayed a start from here until 10.30 a.m.

KAILAPI. Cnclr. PALAFAI.

8 Houses.

This is a particularly neat little village, clean, tidy and well fenced, the houses all being well built and suitably spaced. The Councillor is an oldish man, who takes a great pride in the village, and it certainly does him credit. I would mention that Messrs. Oil Search Ltd. report that the people of this village do everything in their power to assist the company, and sell them fresh vegetables and eggs from day to day. It is very pleasing to receive a report of this nature around this section of the coast.

EPI-MARIKEA.

6 Houses.

Village clean and well fenced, houses all in fairly good condition. Rest House and Barracks in first class order, comparatively new.

KUKIPI. V.C. HAIVERAVI.

43 Houses.

There can be little doubt that this village; which was at one time one of the neatest on this section of the coast; has slipped badly since the untimely death of V.C. HASU from Snakebite. The village is fairly clean, but untidy, with sections of the fence down. The village people, when asked the reason for this, blame the new V.C. saying that he does not live in the village and takes little interest in their welfare, he is all for himself. The V.C. was instructed to clean the village and repair the fences, and also told that if he had not taken up residence in the village before my return he would cease to hold office there. As there was a new Pump to be installed in this village, the rest of the day was spent in supervising the preparations for the installation. It was decided to delay erecting the Pump until my return as a great number of stones are required to be put around the foot to prevent sand blockage, the stones having to be carried from some distance, it would also give the people time to build a firm structure over the well. The night was spent at the Rest-House at EPI Point, orders having been issued that the Rest-House at Kukipi need not be maintained any longer, the better one at EPI being so close.

Saturday, 8th October.

Left Kukipi at 8.30 a.m. and proceeded to the MOTU MOTU district.

ULITAI. V.C. PUKARI. 112 Houses.

For the size of this village it is particularly clean and tidy, houses are mainly in sound condition, with the exception of four, which are already under the course of re-construction. Entire village is well fenced. Rest House and Barracks are all that could be asked for, clean and splendidly built. V.C. PUKARI appears to be a keen and conscientious fellow.

MIRIHEA. V.C. TATIAVA. No.1. 34 Houses.
No.2. 13

These two villages, although on a very poor location; being really just what is left of the old village which was washed away; are clean and well fenced, little can be said or expected of the village as it is exposed to both wind and tide throughout the year.

About to proceed to the next village when a Councillor from KUKIPI arrived and asked me to return there, as a small boy had been shot with an arrow by another small boy. Returning, found that a boy about nine years old named LAPEAI-SAREA had received a thin pointed piece of wood about an inch and a half into his side, just above the heart, he was suffering from fright, but as his pulse was sound and the wound clean, he should be all right in a few days, fixed him up and told his parents that I would look into the matter more fully upon my return, in the meanwhile took the culprit, another boy of about nine years named HINAI-OPAU, along with me to ULITAI and asked V.C. PUKARI to look after him for a while, to avoid any trouble at Kukipi.

As it was fairly late, the night was spent at the ULITAI Rest House.

Sunday, 9th October.

Left Ulitai at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded to:-

MIRAVASI. Chclr. HAVADI. 12 Houses.

Village clean and tidy, well fenced and with houses sound and reasonably spaced. The Rest House and Barracks, although really unnecessary in this village, were in good order and clean. The village is being troubled a bit by the encroachment of the river, at high tide, at the rear of the village, but it is not likely to seriously inconvenience them for a year or two yet.

Before reaching the village of Biaru, the other LESE village was inspected.

AVIALA. V.C. MAHO. 45 Houses.

Although the V.C. was absent from his village, it was found to be clean, tidy and well fenced. The Rest House and Barracks were in excellent condition, built on the same lines as the Biaru Houses, fairly new and well fenced in.

Monday, 10th October.

Left BIARU at 8.30 a.m. after making sundry payments, and proceeded across the BIARU River, where good attention was received from Ferryman MOHA, who was cautioned about his refusal at various times to take natives, proceeding along the coast on business, across by the ferry, Reports having been received from several natives on the coast.

IOKEA. V.C. SEHESE. 94 Houses.

There can be little doubt that this village richly deserves the prize this year for the best kept village, it is spotlessly clean with the houses well spaced in four rows down the village, and in sound condition, many of the houses having been recently rebuilt. The Rest House and Barracks are in first class order, clean, and at the time of my arrival nicely decorated. Worth mention is the house of AVASA, who is by trade a carpenter, it is a two story place, built entirely of native materials, and is a very neat, airy and solid structure.

SAROTA. V.C. KEUALA. 18 Houses.

This village was found to be clean and tidy, but suffering considerably from the wind and sea, which has banked up the sand in front of the village, carrying away the fence in places. The V.C. says that the fence will be rebuilt as soon as the Sou-east winds are over.

LAUOVO. V.C. ISARUA. 17 Houses.

Considering the situation of this village, built more or less on sand dunes, it is quite clean and tidy, it is a fairly desolate looking show, but is well fenced in.

SOLURO. 1 House.

This one house, belonging to one man and his family, is built on a fair sized piece of land, splendidly fenced in and very

neatly planted to Plantation regulations with 40 Coconut Palms, it is one of the best individual holdings along the coast.

UAKURU.

This village is now extinct.

NAUINAVA.

16 Houses.

This village was clean, tidy and well fenced, with houses all appearing to be in fairly good order and condition.

MORIO.

Cnclr. NINORI.

14 Houses.

Situated back slightly from the beach, this village is neat clean and tidy. There are quite a number of Trees and Shrubs growing in the village, that improve its appearance. Rest House and Barracks in a shocking condition, fell through the floor in two places. V.C. was ordered to have a new Rest House and Barracks built within three months. A Rest House is essential here as it is the terminus of the Gulf Division, and the nearest other Rest House is IOKEA, which is too far to get back to in one day with work to do. As a Pump was to be installed at this village the night was spent here.

Tuesday, 11th October.

Instructed village people as regards the preparation for the installation of the Pump and then proceeded to the Camp of the Papuan Aponaipi Petroleum Co., where an inspection of the Company's was carried out. As the company's plant is a mile and a half inland it was late afternoon by the time the coast was reached again, so I accepted the invitation of Mr. & Mrs. Owen to spend the night with them.

(See Inspection Report)

Wednesday, 12th October.

Left the P.A.P. Co. Camp at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded to return back along the coast, return inspection of villages to consist of inspections of Plantations, Water Holes, Cemeteries and results of orders issued on outward inspections. Also a count of all trees in the company Plantations.

LOVE.

V.C. IVE.

20 Houses.

Village clean, tidy and well fenced, houses all in good condition and well spaced.

Cemetery. One fairly large one, clean and very well fenced in.

Water. Obtained from well, sunk close to No.3 Plantation, fenced in and water appears to be clean and in order.

all clean but in only fair condition.

nothing into the job whole heartedly.

Full details of Company Plantations will be found in Plantation Inspection Report, under separate cover.

MORIO.

Here it was found that difficulty had been experienced in locating water for the installation of the new Pump, a shaft had been sunk to a depth of about 30 feet, without water being encountered. As the present Well is unsuitable the people were instructed to continue searching for a more suitable place for the water hole, and that I would continue along to IOKEA with the inspections, and return next day to see how they had progressed regarding water.

Cemetery. One clean and well fenced, situated some distance from the village.

Water. Present supply is obtained from a well, sunk in an old Creek bed, this is unsuitable as it is contaminated by salt water at high tide. Excavating for a new supply is in progress.

Plantations. 5. Nos. 2 & 3 clean and in good order. No. 1 ordered to be cleaned and No. 4 ordered to be cleared, cleaned and replanted during this year, the latter having been allowed to become overgrown and disordered.

NAUINAVA.

Cemetery. There being two, both clean, fenced and well kept.

Water. Is obtained from a small fresh creek running down from the hills, clean and a good supply.

Plantations. 5. One of these, No. 1, is shared by the next village Naulovo. Nos. 1 to 4 are all clean and in good condition, but No. 5 is a complete washout, and in view of the unsuitable ground it is planted on it would be better to let it slide, especially as an interest is taken in the other four.

LAUOVO.

Cemeteries. Four small areas, all clean, well fenced and looked after

Water. Obtained from a small creek flowing down from the hills, good water.

Plantations. 5. The one shared with Nauinava is by far the best, the others are just Plantations. Ordered that No. 4 be cleared, cleaned and replanted during this year, as it has been neglected and become overgrown. Quite a number of new trees planted in other Plantations.

SAROTA.

Cemeteries. Two of fair size, spotlessly clean and very neatly kept.

Water. Obtained from two creeks, one on either side of the village, flowing down from the hills, good clean water.

Plantations. 6. All being very clean and tidy, three of these are very fine Plantations.

Leaving SAROTA proceeded along the beach to IOKEA, where a Court was held, KAREVEA receiving One month I.H.L for Adultery.

As it was fairly late I accepted the kind invitation of Mr. & Mrs. M. Nixon of MORU to remain the night there.

Thursday, 13th October.

Spent the greater part of the morning at the Rest House at IOKEA settling minor disputes over Wives, Land, Goods, Etc., then, leaving four A.C's. at IOKEA in charge of the gear, I returned to MORIO to install the Pump, but this was impossible as water had by then not been found, however after a couple of hours digging in a likely spot water was found, but as it would take the best part of two days to finish digging and erect the Pump scaffold, the village people were carefully instructed what to do, and everything to do with the Pump was fixed up in readiness for placing in position, I left them to complete the job themselves and returned to IOKEA, where the night was spent.

Friday, 14th October.

IOKEA.

Cemetery. One close to the village, very clean and well kept.

Water. Obtained from two Pumps operating over wells, situated in the village, one is working quite satisfactorily, but the other has run dry. The village people have already dug and fenced a new well just outside the village, and it is their intention to move the Pump from the dry well and set it up over the new one. Slight repairs were made to one of the Pumps, a new washer and handle pin being fitted.

Plantations. 7. All in fairly clean order, but the general tendency being to plant the trees too closely together, the people were instructed regarding this error. No.7 is a new Plantation of about ten acres, just cleared and ready for planting. A lot of work is undoubtedly put into these Plantations. No.2 is particularly good.

BIARU.

Cemeteries. Four small ones, all very clean and neatly fenced.

Water. Obtained from two water holes, one at each end of the Village, both strongly fenced, well shaded and clean.

Plantations. 4. All clean, but trees are planted a little too close together and lining is irregular. No. 2 & 3 are very big Plantations trees are mostly bearing well, and appear healthy. Quite a number of new trees have been planted this year.

The night was spent at the Rest House in this village.

Saturday, 15th October.

Spent the morning settling minor disputes, chiefly land, also visited an area of land about 4 miles up the Biaru River known as HERERE, over which there has been a dispute raging between the people of IOKEA and BIARU villages for some years. Lately several fights have occurred between the men of these two villages, and it was found to be impossible to decide to whom the land really belongs, as both parties claim that Mr. A.R.H. Rutledge settled the question two years ago by making a Mango Tree the boundary, unfortunately there are many Mango trees in the locality, and each party claims a different tree. As Mr. Rutledge is now back in this division, I instructed the people of both villages that nobody was to work on the area in dispute, until further advised, as doubtless Mr. Rutledge will have a better idea of the situation.

Proceeded to AVIALA where, as it was fairly late, the night was spent at the Rest House.

Sunday, 16th October.

Being Sunday the Police attended, at their request, the village church, during which time I wrote mail and attended to office matters. In the afternoon inspected Plantations, Cemeteries, Etc.,

AVIALA.

Cemeteries. Two cemeteries, both clean and well fenced.

Water. Obtained from Water Hole situated outside the village, strongly fenced and particularly well shaded by trees and shrubs, water clean and appears healthy.

Plantations. 2. All clean and in fair condition, trees although bearing in the main are not looking as healthy as they could, I think on account of lack of rain. All Plantations situated along the beach, west of the village.

Setting into the job which character.

Monday, 17th October.

Left AVIALA at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded by the overland track to POPO. A.C. BOBI being left at the Barracks in charge of the gear, only a minimum being carried to Popo. After a number of land disputes had been settled en route, arrived POPO at about 3.0 p.m., when the local villages were inspected.

The road all the way in is in excellent order, and around Popo villages long sections of the road have been built up about two feet above ground level, bordered and staked, and deep drains dug along both sides of the road.

Around this area it is a veritable land of plenty, the natives having unlimited supplies of Sago, Bananas, Paw Paw and Limes, with Coconuts, Pineapples, Mangos, Pumpkins and Oranges also growing well and in fairly large quantities.

SELIVO. V.C. EEAVIRI. 12 Houses.

This village was found to be very clean and tidy, and as a Festival was in progress it was nicely decorated. All houses were in a good state of repair.

Cemetery. Situated about a mile and a half from the village, an open affair on the side of a hill, clean and tidy.

Water. Is obtained from the OKIVA River, upon the banks of which all the POPO Villages are built, water is clean and fresh.

BAIREE. 5 Houses.

This is an extremely pretty little village, very clean & tidy with Crotons, Bougainvillea and other plants and shrubs in flower in the village.

Cemetery. The same one is used as for the previous village.

Water. Obtained from the River.

MAKAE. V.C. AVASA. 14 Houses.

Village clean and tidy, all houses in good sound order, six of them are new, just being completed.

Cemetery. As other villages in this locality.

Water. From the River.

LULUAPO. Cnclr. HALALA. 13 Houses.

Clean with the exception of one corner of the village, this area was ordered to be cleaned. Houses all in fairly good condition.

The night was spent at the Rest House. Both Rest House and Barracks are new structures, splendidly built and in excellent condition, and quite the Country Residence as far as outlook goes.
Tuesday, 18th October.

On the return journey to the coast the Plant, Etc. of the A.P.O. Co., was inspected and found to be in the main clean and clear of grass, although there is very little left that would burn should there be a fire, I deemed it advisable to instruct the V.C. to cut and clear away the grass over a bigger area around the various stacks of Plant equipment, as at present the cleared areas would hardly act as fire-breaks.

As instructed I examined the Two Cases of Gelignite, and found them to be in a very dangerous state, badly sweated and weeping, so had them carefully removed and got V.C. PUKARI of ULITAI, who had come up to POPO on village business, to take them down to the coast by way of the KAPURI River, and there to meet me the following day at the mouth of the river.

Continued on down to the coast where the village of KAVORA was visited.

KAVORA.

Cemeteries. Five, all strongly fenced, clean and tidy.

Water. Obtained from a well, sunk quite close to the Company Plantations, a new Pump is being installed here, water good and clean well fenced in and shaded.

Plantations. 5. All clean and tidy, in fairly good condition except that the trees are showing signs of lack of rain. Considerable work is being expanded on the Plantations, as there are many new trees planted this year.

The new Pump was installed and was working well, the village people having done as they were instructed during my absence and gathered many stones for the bottom of the well, they had also made quite a good job of boarding up the sides. The people were highly pleased with the Pump and intimated that they would improve the well still further, by taking the Pump out, digging the hole deeper and trying to make it more sand-proof.

The night was spent at the AVIALA Rest House.

Wednesday, 19th October.

Left Aviala at 8.3 a.m., and proceeded to NOTU NOTU.
"settling into" job which is nearly done.

The following Ferryman were on duty at their various crossings, with suitable Canoes:-

KAROROTI	3	LESE RIVER.
OHAULAI	3	LAVALI RIVER.
OAKIVA	3	IRAVA CREEK.
IRARE	3	KAPURI RIVER.
HEI	3	PAHO RIVER.
HANAUKA	3	LAKEKAMU RIVER.

LALAIPIPI.

Cemetery. One, a short distance from the village, clean and strongly fenced.

Water. Obtained from the LAKEKAMU River, on the bank of which the village is built.

Plantations. 3. These plantations are shared with the next village, MIRIVASI, and are just average Plantations, situated in a line along the coast, clean, with a fair number of new trees recently planted.

MIRIVASI.

Cemetery. There is one small cemetery some distance from the village, it is more like an enthusiastic Agriculturist's prize garden, being one mass of flowers, bordered by neat rows of Pineapples, however it is clean and very tidy and well fenced.

Water. Is obtained from a tributary of the Lakekamu River, which flows behind the village.

Plantations. See previous village, LALAIPIPI.

ULITAI.

Cemeteries. Four in all, fairly well fenced and all clean, situated a fair distance from the village.

Water. Obtained from a Well, by a Pump, which is in good working order. People requested that the Pump be made higher, as this was advisable, a further length of pipe was screwed on. Well area is clean and neatly housed.

Plantations. 3. All these Plantations are suffering severely from the erosion by the tide, trees are daily being washed away. What is left of the Plantations is as clean as can be expected. As these areas will undoubtedly be under water completely in a year or so, I advised the V.C. and Councillors to look around for new and more suitable land and to start new Plantations.

The night was spent at the Rest House.

Thursday, 20th October.

After settling disputes amongst the village people, left at

settling into the job which is being done at the MIRIVASI village.

Com
MIRIUBA.

Cemeteries. Two situated some distance from the village, both clean and well fenced.

Water. Obtained from the River, which flows at the rear of the village.

Plantations. 2 The No.1 Plantation is in splendid order, clean, tidy and well lined, one of the best on the coast. No.2 is not so good, as it is situated on the beach and is suffering damage by tide erosion, but is as clean and tidy as can be expected.

KUKIPI.

Cemetery. Situated on an island in the Lakemaru delta, well away from the village, is clean and tidy.

Water. Is obtained from a well situated on the ocean side of the village. As per instructions I installed a Pump here which is working well. The village people did as they were instructed and collected a large quantity of stones for the bottom of the hole, and have boarded up the sides to prevent the sand falling in. Instructions have been issued to the V.C. that trees and shrubs are to be planted around the well for shade.

Plantations. 2 The No.2 Plantation situated east of the village is in good order, being clean and tidy. Instructions issued to the V.C. to cut down one of the trees which was badly infected by Red Weevil, and to burn it. The other two Plantations were an insult to the name No.3 being hard to distinguish from virgin bush and No.1 being in a filthy state. V.C. was ordered to have both areas thoroughly cleared and cleaned by the time of my return from Tiviri P.C.

V.C. HAIVERAVE, although twice told that he must move to Kukipi Village if he wishes to remain the Village Constable, is still living at BEI POINT, he was again cautioned to move.

The night was spent at this village.

Friday, 21st October.

The day was spent at Kukipi with Court Work and general disputes, also fixing items for Kerema. A.C. KURUWA was dispatched to Kerema with mail and in charge of three prisoners. The night was again spent at Kukipi.

Saturday, 22nd October.

After clearing up the rest of the village disputes left at
"settling" into the job which is necessary to NEWIANT villages.

Arriving at HOVIAMI at about 1.30 p.m. the remainder of the day was spent in making various W.M.L. payments, of which there were many. Night was spent at the Rest House.

Sunday, 23rd October.

Inspected villages and arranged for Canoes and Sage for the trip up river on the morrow.

HEAVALA.

132 Houses.

Village in fairly good order, clean and tidy and well fenced. The Houses, with the exception of three, are in good condition, the three in an unsafe condition are being rebuilt. This village is well planted with Bread-fruit Trees, Oranges and Mangoes.

HEATOARE.

V.C. KIRI.

81 Houses.

This village is not nearly so cramped for space as the last village, the Houses, all of which are in good condition, are well spaced and the area is clean, tidy and well fenced. The Rest House and Barracks are situated just outside the village and are clean, well kept and in first class condition. This village is also well planted with Mango, Bread-fruit, Orange, Lime and Paw Paw trees. There are many new houses in the village, all of which are well built and on a much improved plan to the old structures.

The remaining two villages of this group, which are some distance away, have been left until my return from Tiviri.

Monday, 24th October.

After purchasing a small quantity of Sage from the village people, left Hoviavi at about 9.0 a.m. in three Canoes and with 18 village natives as Carriers and Paddlers, and proceeded up the LAKE-KAMU River from Tiviri. Pulled in at a rough village Rest House on the Eastern Bank at about 5.30 p.m., where the night was spent. Heavy rain at night, river in flood.

Tuesday, 25th October.

Broke camp at 7.0 a.m. and continued on up the River until about 5.0 p.m., when camp was made at a large village garden named GULIMATENA, it had been raining solidly for about two hours and continued most of the night.

Wednesday, 26th October.

Left camp at about 7.0 a.m. and continued on up the River reaching WRULAU at about 6.0 p.m., again in heavy rain. Here it was getting into the job whole heartedly.

getting into the job whole heartedly.

night was spent here.

Sorting out gear to be taken on up river and that to be left, the state, many trees down across the road and water waist deep. After returned to OLIVIA in heavy rain, the track being in a bad

Tuesday, 1st November.

the night at the camp. Replaced A.C. HALL with A.C. BOBI. had four broken down condensers, and no spares were on hand. Spent down. Endeavoured to effect repairs without success, as the machine had asked me to have a look at his Radio transmitter which had broken then proceeded back to Sunset where the Dredge Manager, Mr. Kudrig, held Labour Inspection (See Inspection Report of 1st Oct.)

Monday, 21st October.

the week-end, so had to remain until the morning fall-in. Inspection as a number of the indentured natives had gone bush for Inspected Native Labourers Houses, but unable to complete

Sunday, 29th October.

JAB.

Sunset to endeavour to obtain Rice seed from mining fallings at PUN- Received radio instructions from the R.M.G.D., whilst at noon the night was spent there.

A. E. Bohumie at Hougaito Creek, arriving there in the late afternoon (29th October), and after lunch proceeded on to the Mining Camp of Mr. Hold a Native Labour Inspection (See Inspection Report of

Saturday, 28th October.

ling. Remained the night at the camp. at about 12.0 noon found the Manager was away for the day lost drill- and proceeded in to the LANT Gold Dredging Co., arriving there before. Left A.C. HALL and KAD with two carriers at the camp. Left camp, as from here on they would only be an additional ex- Dispatched eight natives back down the river in the morn-

Friday, 27th October.

at the recently abandoned camp of Old Search Ltd. OLIVIA which was reached at about 5.0 p.m. The night being spent Left OLIVIA at about 7.0 a.m. and continued up River to

Thursday, 27th October.

NOIVIAI Berryman.

Wednesday, 2nd November.

As a number of Hoviavi Village people were camped at the OLIPAI landing, A.C. HAILA was left there in charge of the gear, and with ten carriers and three Police proceeded on up the river, by the remaining two canoes, to BULLDOG. Arriving at about 4.0 p.m. found the place in an appalling state. The Police Camp was so overgrown that it was difficult to get into the Officers House. It was obvious that not a tap of weed or a blade of grass had been cut since the last inspection up here. Worse was to follow, apparently the A.C.'s. up here had commenced by living in the Barracks, when they started to fall down they moved to the Gaol, when the roof of that fell in they moved, with the two Prisoners, to the Office where they were found to be all together with empty Fish and Meat tins as far as the eye could see, just thrown away anywhere around the houses. A.C. ELIJAH had no excuse to offer just saying that there was too much work to do. When he had opened the store to check the ration supplies, he informed me that there was nothing left to eat, this was hardly believable, but proved to be correct, all that remained in the store was a Case of Soap and a few pounds of rather weevil eaten Wheatmeal. Asked what had become of all the Rice, Wheatmeal, Peas, Fish, Etc., he said that he, the other A.C. and the Prisoners had eaten it all, a glance at the two Prisoners somewhat confirmed this, as they were so fat that they could hardly stand. Below is a list of approximately what Two A.C.'s. and Two Prisoners have eaten in Three and a half months, in addition to Sweet Potatoes, Bananas, PawPaws, Pumpkin and Pineapples which were growing on the place, and had not been replanted.:-

900 lbs Rice.	160 lbs. Meat.	220 Boxes Matches.
400 " Wheatmeal.	347 " Fish.	7 Gals. Kerosene.
50 " Peas.	300 " Sugar.	
54 " Meat.	20 " Tobacco.	

These figures being computed from an inventory made by Mr. P.O. Bensted on the 19th July last, and from waybills of "Ronald S" cargo for the T.P.C. A full report has been returned under separate cover to the R.M.G.D. of the conditions as found at the Camp.

Thursday, 3rd. November.

There being no rations to take out to the Police at out-camps, the only way was to wait for the launch with the supplies, due on Friday. The day was spent clearing the Camp, the ten carriers getting into the job whole heartedly.

Friday, 4th November.

Continued with the work of clearing and cleaning up the Camp. Launch did not arrive.

Saturday, 5th November.

Launch arrived at about 10.30 a.m., with 5 Bags Rice and 2 Sacks Wheatmeal for the Police Camp. After lunch proceeded to NEPA with 90 lbs. Rice and 60 lbs. Wheatmeal, being part of Rations due for past three months to Mr. H. R. Garbutt issued from week to week to the A.C. stationed at Nepa.

Sunday, 6th November.

Inspected all Labourers Houses, Etc.. Remained at NEPA as a number of the Labourers were away.

Monday, 7th November.

Held Native Labour Inspection at the fall-in at 6.0 a.m. (See Inspection Report of 7th November). Then returned along the Bulldog Road for about 4 miles, then turned off along the now almost extinct track to PUNJAB. Arriving at what is left of the old Punjab Camp I scoured the entire area for signs of Rice growing, but without success; everything is densely overgrown but there is no trace left of any Rice which may have been planted. Returned to Bulldog.

Tuesday, 8th November.

As the Launch was due to return with the remainder of the Camp supplies early on Wednesday morning, and there was still a great deal of work to be done to put the Police Camp in anything like decent order, it was decided to remain and make use of the Ten Carriers until after the arrival of the Launch. Most of the overgrown ground has been cleared off and burning up the rubbish is in progress. Sundry repairs have also been accomplished to the Officers House, although the Roof is in a leaky condition, time does not permit re-roofing. I suffered injury to the left foot and leg during the day, when the main door to the house collapsed, depositing me on the ground ten feet below. New steps are being constructed.

An inventory of Tools, Etc. was taken and reported under separate cover.

Wednesday, 9th November.

Continued with the improvements to the Police Camp, and

the Launch arrived at 12.0 a.m., with stores for the Camp and a mail from Kerema. Received instructions from the R.M.S.D. to remain at the Camp for a few days and to commence clearing the Bulldog Aerodrome, also received the information that eight more Prisoners and an A.C. were on the way up river to assist with the clearing of the 'drome. Marked out the area to be cleared.

Thursday, 10th November.

There being two Prisoners stationed at the Police Camp, and two A.C.'s., with the ten Carriers and three A.C.'s. I had with me made a total of seventeen, and as only 5 Knives could be found at the Camp, seven were borrowed from Mr. H. R. Garbutt at NEPA. Two A.C.'s. were put to work to knock the garden into shape, with the help of one Prisoner, the rest commenced clearing the 'drome. About 50 yds. by 45 yds. wide was cleared during the day. As directed by the R.M.S.D. Interpreter KAVINI and A.C. UDANIA were dispatched on the Launch to MUVIAMI to bring up Village Natives and a quantity of BIRI Leaf, to rebuild the houses at the Camp.

Friday, 11th November.

Continued with clearing the 'drome, and about another 50 yards was cleared. As rain commences very heavily about 3.0 p.m. each day, it makes the clearing rather heavy work. Also the natives have to be on the look-out for snakes, there being many about, a Death Adder and Brown Snake were killed during the morning.

Saturday, 12th November.

Continued with the work until 1.0 p.m. then spent part of the afternoon burning off the cut grass until rain stopped play.

Sunday, 13th November.

Being Sunday the morning was spent drying out and burning off the grass, rain again prevented this being carried on in the afternoon. A.C. ABAIA arrived with 2 Prisoners by Canoe.

Monday, 14th November.

As each of the Prisoners from Kerema had a knife, all hands were turned to the Aerodrome and about another 30 yds. was cleared. A.C. ABAIA was unable to return down river owing to one of the Old Men he brought up as crew from the Canoe, was ill.

Tuesday, 15th November.

Dispatched A.C. ABAIA back to Kerema with a mail. Three of the Prisoners ill today, check complaints, the remainder went

(25)

on with the work on the 'drome, finished to the 300 yd. mark this day. As there was no rain, a fair bit of grass was burnt.

Wednesday, 16th November.

Continuing with the clearing.

Thursday, 17th November.

Still on with the Aerodrome, now nearing completion.

Friday, 18th November.

Completed clearing an area 600 yds. long by 45 yds wide, of all cane and grass, a Plane could easily land or take off.

Saturday, 19th November.

As the Interpreter and A.C. UBAMA had not yet arrived back from MOVIAMI, half the Prisoners and half the Carriers continued with grubbing the roots and larger tufts out of the 'drome, while the others were set to work on the garden, and cutting new piles for the re-building of the house.

Sunday, 20th November.

Walked in to NEPA to make an enquiry to the native in the employ of Mr. H. R. Garbutt, and then to collect 12/- on his account as compensation to be paid to a native of KUMIPI village, for a small Pig that was killed. Stayed the night at Nopa.

Monday, 21st November.

Returned early to Bulldog, and continued with the work around the place. A.C. UBAMA and Int. FEAVIRI arrived with a mail from Korema, 14 Village Natives and 4 Canoes loaded with Sago and Biri Leaf. Advice received from the R.M.S.D. that a Plane would be out early this week to inspect the 'drome.

Tuesday, 22nd November.

Four natives on sawing Biri for roofing. Fourteen on clearing away the remains of the old Barracks and cutting new posts, the remainder on finishing off the 'drome. Weighed Sago and took down names of native suppliers, who are to be paid at Moviami.

Wednesday, 23rd November.

Plane was expected to-day but did not arrive, so work was continued on Barracks and Garden, with the Prisoners only, on the Drome.

Thursday, 24th November.

Proceeded with the same work during the morning, and at

12.15 p.m. a Stinson Heliant landed with Pilot Jackson and Messrs Bickham and Chater. They inspected the Aerodrome, and expressed the opinion that it was in good condition and would be most useful as an emergency drop for all types of Aircraft (land) during the proposed Air Survey over the surrounding district by the Australian Petroleum Co. Plane left at about 1. p.m. Specifications of the Aerodrome at that time were: 500 yds long, 45 yds wide, with an extra 30 yds wing clearance on one side, and about 200 yds of low scrub at either end. Continued with the work on the Barracks and garden.

Friday, 25th November.

Made an inventory of all tools, Rations, etc., and checked over everything with A.C. DOMANASI who signed the list of items left in his charge. Barracks practically completed. Leaving A.C. DOMANASI in charge of the Camp, with 9 Prisoners, I left the Police Camp at 1.0 p.m. with A.C.'s. ELIJAH, KOTO, NOIRUE, HALLA and UDAMA; the last named to proceed to Sunset and Mosquito Creek with letters, advising the Mining Camps that the over-due Rations issued to the Police, would be adjusted at the earliest, then to return to the Camp at Bulldog; also with me were the 10 Carriers and Prisoner IVIATIA, who I had been instructed to bring back to Kerema by the R.M.C.D. We proceeded down river to OLIPAI, where the night was spent.

Saturday, 26th November.

After dispatching A.C. UDAMA to Sunset, left OLIPAI at about 7.0 a.m. and continued on down river to URULAU, arriving at about 12.30 p.m. After lunch A.C.'s. NOIRUE & HALLA and Prisoner IVIATIA were left at URULAU in charge of the Canoes and gear, while the other two A.C.'s. and Carriers accompanied me into the KOVIO. Arriving at KAMA at 3.30 p.m., the village was found to be deserted and apparently abandoned. As it was raining heavily and KAWPAW was a fair distance away, the night was spent here.

Sunday, 27th November.

Left KAMA at 7.0 a.m. and arrived at KAWPAW at 10.30 a.m.

KAWPAW. V.C. AGANI.

17 Houses.

This village was found to be in particularly good order,

very clean houses and in good order, and neatly fenced round. The V.C. informed us that KAVA village has been abandoned for some months, and that all the people are now living at KAVPAW, which is certainly a much better idea, as it has made one decent sized village instead of two small ones. During the day a complete census was taken of the village, the total being as follows:-

27 Males. (Adult)
17 Females.
23 Males. (Minors)
11 Females.

making a total of 58.

A strange thing in this village is the fluency with which the people, Men, Women and Children, speak the Police Motuan, strange, in as much as one would not expect it from people living so far from the beaten track, and not often visited by Patrols, in this respect they are well ahead of the coastal village people of this Division. These people appear to be very happy and contented, and there is noticeably no sign of the usual sickness and disease.

Monday, 28th November.

In company with V.C. MABI, left KAVPAW at 7.0 a.m. and proceeded through the swamps and over the range to KAPUI, arriving there at 12.0 noon. The Mosquitoes on this track are as bad as I have known them to be anywhere, thousands of the small black variety, who are well versed in the art of biting quickly.

KAPUI. Snolpa. PLO & KAPUI. 14 Houses.

This village was also very clean and tidy, and is well situated on the bank of KAPUI CREEK. Well fenced on three sides, with the creek on the fourth. Houses are all in good, sound condition, two of them having been recently reconstructed. A few Coconut Palms are growing near the village and are healthy and bearing well. The people are also very well off for food, having good gardens along the banks of the creek, which produce large quantities of Sweet Potato, Taro, Pumpkin and Banana. There are also large areas of Sago Palms. A Census was taken of this village, and the totals were as follows:

22 Males (Adult)
17 Females "
11 Males (Minors)
8 Females "

making a total of 58. The majority of the people appear healthy.

although there are two or three of the children suffering from Yaws.

During the afternoon the Carriers were busy making a couple of Rafts, as I saw no reason why I should not try to raft down the KUMINAIPA River. The night was spent at the Village.
Tuesday, 29th November.

Left KAFUI and proceeded for about a mile down to the mouth of the Creek, on to the KUMINAIPA. Here the Rafts were completed and we left KAFUI Creek at 9.3 a.m. The river is very pretty at this point, with the banks a mass of D'Albortia, it is very deep, but not very wide, but very few snags. Made camp on the bank about a mile above the junction of the OREBA River, at about 5.30 p.m.

Wednesday, 30th November.

Broke camp at 6.30 a.m. and continued on down the river past the mouth of the OREBA and on into the LAKEKAMU, passing the OLIPAI landing at about 1.30 p.m. and arriving at URULAU at 5.30 p.m. Received notes from both Mr. H. R. Garbutt of NEPA and Mr. M. Halford of Sunset, per A.C. UDAMA who was waiting at Urulau, advising trouble at the Camps. In the first case Mr. Garbutt reported that four Mankuku Natives had visited his camp and that there had been a bit of a fight with some of his labourers, he did not attach much importance to it and thought that his own natives were at fault, but asked if another A.C. could be sent to the Camp until the trouble had blown over. A.C. UDAMA was therefore instructed to return to Bulldog, and go out to NEPA for a while, but that he was to go into the Police Camp from time to time to see that all was well with A.C. DOMASAI. Mr. Halford asked if I could return to Sunset at once to settle the fighting that had broken out between natives of different villages, in the employ of Tivori Gold Dredging Co., and that if I could not get back, some of the natives had stated that they were going to Kerema to settle the trouble. As I was almost out of food for the Police and Carriers, I replied that I would endeavour to make a quick trip up by the launch, which was due to leave Kukupi in a day or so. The night was spent at the Urulau Rest House.

Thursday, 1st December.

Left KUKIPI at 6 a.m. and proceeded down river to NOVIAVI, calling in at Torapa Mission for a brief visit, where the Fathers were all in the best of health, arriving at Noviaivi about 6.30 p.m. Carriers were dismissed and the night spent at the Rest House.

Friday, 2nd December.

Heard that the "Ronald S" was due to arrive at Kukipi today, and that the launch might leave straight away, so after fixing up a few disputes in the village proceeded on down to KUKIPI.

Spent the afternoon sorting out stores and gear, and remained the night here.

Saturday, 3rd December.

"Ronald S" arrived at 6.0 a.m., with passengers Mrs. F.A. Bonsted and Miss Bethune, and as soon as the cargo was unloaded the Launch, in charge of Mr. F. W. Clark, left for Tivari. I left by the launch, leaving A.C. ELIJAH in charge of the Police and Prisoner, and the Stores. In a mail from Koroma I found that an error had been made in the radio received at Sunset, and that two Prisoners instead of the one should have been brought down from the Police Camp, so wrote instructing A.C. DOMANABI to send the other Prisoner MARIKOIVI down by the launch, and asked Mr. Clark if he would mind seeing that the native came by the return of the launch. Spent the night on the river.

Sunday, 4th December.

On board the Launch proceeding up river.

Monday, 5th December.

Arrived at OLIPAI at 3.0 p.m. and I was met by A.C. BOBI, so proceeded straight in to SUNSET, arriving there at about 5.30 p.m. and after Dinner, as it was too late to hold C.M.M., I set about installing the Dredging Co's. new wireless transmitter, but owing to it having been badly knocked about in transit, I had to work on it nearly all night, before it was got into going order.

Tuesday, 6th December.

Held C.M.M., seven NALIM natives receiving various fines, as the matter then appeared to be satisfactorily settled, I returned to OLIPAI to await the return of the launch from Bulldog, which arrived in the late afternoon, so the night was spent at the Landing.

Wednesday, 7th December.

Left OLIPAI by the Launch and proceeded down river to KUKIPI, arriving there in the evening.

Thursday, 8th December.

Remained at KUKIPI village, where a Dance and Feast was in progress, in celebration of the presentation of the Prize for the Best Kept Plantation for the year 1937/38. Prize was presented during the afternoon.

Friday, 9th December.

Proceeded back up the river to MOVIAMI, where the day was spent making payments to Carriers and for Sage bought, also sundry W.M.L. A/c. payments, settling disputes and holding C.M.M.

Saturday, 10th December.

Continued settling disputes, of which there are always hundreds in this village, all minor affairs, which, when sorted out are easily settled. Inspected the villages.

HEAVALA

Since the C.M.M. held on Friday, when 18 Natives of this village were proceeded against under N.O. 1-4, the village has been very thoroughly cleaned. The houses ordered to be rebuilt on my previous visit are still under reconstruction.

Cemetery. Situated some distance from the village, and is clean, tidy and well fenced.

Water. Obtained from the Tauri and Lakokani Rivers.

Plantations. 2 No. 1 clean and fairly tidy, but No. 2 appears to have been let rip, V.C. ordered to have it cleaned and gaps in lines replanted before next visit of Officer.

HEATOARE.

Cemetery. A short distance from the village, clean, tidy and well fenced.

Water. Obtained from the Tauri River.

Plantations. 3 All very clean and tidy and in good condition.

Returned to Kukupi, where further C.M.M. was held.

Sunday, 11th December.

As per instructions from the R.M.C.D. I took soundings of/on the Kukupi Bar at various stages of the tide, also the depth and course of the channels inside the Bar. This was rather difficult as the channel over the bar changes with almost every storm.

Papuan Chief arrived off Kukipi at 6.15 p.m., and landed a small bag of mail for Korema, which was handed to Mr. F. Middleton of A.P.C., who was going to Korema on the morrow. Received a mail from Korema per the beach, instructing me to send two of my A.C.'s. to Korema as soon as possible.

Monday, 12th December.

Remained at Kukipi awaiting the arrival of natives from BIARU, who had been sent for ~~me~~ to receive W.N.L. A/c. payments, again checked up on the depth of the Bar and Channels. The A.P.C. boat "Pothrero" arrived and sailed again during the morning, and I dispatched A.C.'s. KOTO and HAILA, after the Captain had assured me that it was no trouble and that he was only too pleased to take them. Attended to several more disputes.

Tuesday, 13th December.

Proceeded up to SAVAIVIRI for a general inspection.

SAVAIVIRI. V.C. KEAU. 35 Houses.

A very pretty little village, particularly clean and tidy with many of the houses drained. Plenty of Flowers, Shrubs and Trees growing in the village. Houses all in sound condition.

Cemetery. Clean and well fenced, with plenty of flowers growing.

Water. Obtained from the River.

Plantations. 5 All very clean and well kept, a great deal of work is obviously done on all Plantations.

Carried on up the river to TOPALA.

TOPALA. V.C. ARIFEAI. 22 Houses.

Also a very neat and pretty village, spotlessly clean, with houses all in fairly good condition and nicely spaced, Flowers and Crotons growing everywhere. One of the best villages on this section of the coast.

Cemetery. Situated some distance behind the village, clean and well fenced, also with many flowers growing.

Water. Obtained from the Tauri River.

Plantations. All of a good standard, clean and tidy, and showing that a fair amount has been done in the way of work.

After making sundry payments, returned to Kukipi.

Wednesday, 14th December.

Dispatched all gear by canoe to LELEFIRU in charge of

A.C. ELIJAH, and proceeded myself to TAVAFURU.

TAVAFURU.

It was pleasing to find that this village is in the course of being moved to a new site, the new situation is about 300 yards inland, to the North-West of the old village, and is quite a good spot. Four houses have been completed and four others are under construction. The Councillors complain that there are one or two people who refuse to move and are remaining in the old village, these have been given three months to move.

Cemetery. Situated well away from the village, clean, tidy and well planted with Flowers and Shrubs.

Water. Obtained from a Well on the northern side of Tavafuru Crk. quite good water, Well fenced and shaded.

No Plantations.

Continued on along the beach to:

HABUJABU.

Village still as bad as ever, no attempt has been made to move to a new site, on the instructions from the R.M.G.D. nothing was done, but a report was furnished to the R.M. at Kerema, containing the names of all the owners of houses in the village.

Continued on to LELEFIRU.

LELEFIRU.

Preparations for the removal of this village to a new site, are well under way, the new area having been marked out with pegs, the V.C. and Councillors were only awaiting my approval to commence building the new houses, they also requested to borrow the two spades I had with me, to dig the Post holes. As they were making a good effort to move, the spades were lent for a period of one month. The new site is a short distance inland from the beach, and about half a mile west of the old site, and will be a great improvement in every respect.

Cemeteries. 5 All clean and neatly fenced, situated between the old and new village sites.

Water. Obtained from two Wells on the northern bank of the creek behind the village, clean and well fenced.

Plantations. 3 No.1 and No.2 are neat, clean and tidy, but No.3 has been ordered to be cleaned before next visit of an Officer.

The night was spent at the Rest House.

Thursday, 15th December.

Continued on along the beach to KOARU.

KOARU.

Village clean and tidy.

Cemeteries. 2 A short distance west of the village, clean, but not fenced at all, ordered to construct a strong fence right away.

Water. Obtained from a Water-hole situated behind the village, clean, well fenced and shaded by a number of trees.

Plantations. 5 All very clean and well kept, and of a good standard.

Called on Mr. F. W. Clark during the afternoon, and found all to be well with him, made an advance to one of his Labourers, accepted an invitation to dinner that night. Spent the afternoon fixing up the Land Dispute between KOARU and LELEFIRU, checked and re-marked the boundaries as shown by Mr. A.R.M. Thompson's Map of twelve years ago, and ordered a boundary fence to be erected by both village peoples, and so settle the matter finally.

Night was spent at the Rest House.

Friday, 16th December.

Continued on along the beach, inspecting all villages to Karama.

ERAVA.

Village clean and tidy. One man ELEFALE-AVAHA has been given 3 months in which to rebuild his house.

Cemetery. Well fenced and clean, situated a short distance from village.

Water. Obtained from Water-hole in the Plantation, just outside the village. Well fenced and shaded, apparently good water.

Plantations. 1. Quite a good plantation, clean and tidy.

URU.

Village in good order, clean and tidy, and has been newly fenced.

Cemetery. Clean and newly fenced, with a few plants growing.

Water. Water-hole just behind the village, clean, shaded & fenced.

Plantation. 1 Some damage by tide erosion, otherwise quite good, clean and tidy.

ARU.

Clean and tidy, with a newly erected fence around village.

Cemetery. Newly fenced and clean, a few flowers growing.

Water. Water-hole has also been newly fenced-in and is clean.

Plantations. 1 Much damage has been caused by tide erosion, and the area was as clean as could be expected in view of this.

KAIVIPI-PUKARI.

Village clean and the new fence has been completed.

Cemetery. Also newly fenced and clean.

Water. Water-hole fenced and shaded and in good order.

Plantation. 1 Damaged a fair amount by tide erosion, otherwise clean.

IYAFIRU.

Clean and tidy, with new fence.

Cemetery. Well fenced and clean.

Water. Obtained from Water-hole, also newly fenced and clean.

No Plantations.

OFASA.

Village in excellent order, no faults to find at all.

Cemetery. Clean and well fenced.

Water. Well fenced, clean, with plenty of shade.

Plantation. In good order, clean and tidy.

MEARI.

Also in excellent order.

Cemetery. Situated a short distance from the village, and is well fenced and clean.

Water. Obtained from a Water-hole in the village, shaded, clean and well fenced.

Plantation. Quite a fair Plantation, clean and tidy.

NAVIAVIOPATERA.

Village clean and tidy and well fenced.

Cemetery. Ordered to fence it in, otherwise clean.

Water. Water-hole, clean and well fenced.

Plantation. Quite a good one, clean and tidy. One diseased tree was ordered to be cut down and burnt.

PARAKOU. KIOVIARAFIRU. IVARIKA. KEREVA. NAUKIAVA.

These villages are all grouped together, and what a vast improvement in their condition since my last visit, when the place resembled a rubbish tip. Evidently 'blowing them up' had its effect on the people, as the whole area was very clean, newly fenced and many of the houses have been either rebuilt or renovated.

Cemeteries. Situated a short distance west of the village, clean and well fenced.

Water. Obtained from the Creek.

Plantations. 2 Neither of them particularly good efforts, although both clean and tidy.

The night was spent at the Rest House. Ordered the V.C. to have the Rest House and Barracks repaired before the next visit of an Officer.

Saturday, 17th December.

Dispatched A.C. ELIJAH with all the gear and Carriers to the Rest House at UAMAI, and proceeded on along the coast. Called at the residence of MR. W. Field, and peaceably settled a dispute over damage done by Pigs, between him and local village natives, then proceeded to:

MORA'A.

Village clean and fairly tidy, and has been recently re-fenced. V.C. Complained that two men would not build their houses farther back from the beach as the others had done, and as was advised by me. As the houses in question were in a rather unsound state, the men, MIRI-KAIPKA and NAVAII-APALI were each given 2 months in which to rebuild the houses.

Cemetery. Some distance from the village, clean and well fenced.

Water. Water-hole ordered to be fenced-in before the next visit of an Officer.

Plantations. 3 All only fair, Nos. 1 & 2 were clean, but No. 3 had the rubbish dumped anywhere, ordered to clean and replant in spaces before next visit.

NA'ARU.

Village clean and in good order.

Cemetery. Clean and well fenced.

Plantation. 1 Clean and well kept. V.C. instructed to extend the Plantation where possible.

NOKUOVO.

Village very clean, well fenced and in good order.

Cemetery. Excellent, clean with plenty of flowers growing & fenced.

Water. Clean, well shaded and fenced.

Plantations 3. All clean, some damage by erosion to No. 1. V.C. ordered to replant in the spaces in lines of Nos. 2 & 3.

POHARA.

Village clean and orderly, a new fence has been erected round the village.

Cemetery. Clean and newly fenced.

Water. Water-hole well shaded and clean, newly fenced.

Plantations. 2 Both good, being clean and tidy.

Night was spent at the Rest House.

Sunday, 18th December.

This day was spent inspecting the Plantations and Villages just mentioned, and the night was again spent at the Rest House.

Monday, 19th December.

Dispatched A.C. ELIJAH in charge of all gear, with Carriers to SILO Rest House, and I continued with the inspections along the coast.

FARAKAHU.

Village in good order, clean and well fenced, Rest House and Barracks in good order, the list on the Rest House Kitchen has been rectified.

Cemetery. Situated inland a short distance, across Uamai Creek, clean and newly fenced.

Water. Obtained from a Water-hole, situated near the Plantations, fenced in, and clean.

Plantation Not any. Shared with other villages.

IROPE.

Village now clean and tidy, with a new, fairly strong fence.

Cemetery. Situated west of the village, clean and well fenced.

Water. Water-hole in behind the village, clean and fenced.

Plantations. 3. All very good plantations, clean and tidy.

LALABU.

Village clean and tidy, but badly fenced. V.C. instructed to have it refenced before my next visit.

Cemetery. Well fenced and clean, a few flowers growing.

Water. Obtained from a Water-hole, situated just outside the village, clean and well shaded.

Plantations. 3 All clean and tidy. Nos. 2 & 3 good plantations.

IVEFIRU.

Village clean and tidy, and in good order and condition.

Cemetery. Two cemeteries, one at either end of the village, about 200 yds. distant, clean and newly fenced, with plants growing.

Water. Obtained from two Water-holes, close to the village, both well fenced, clean and shaded.

Plantation. Quite a good standard, clean and tidy, well kept.

IVAU'U.

Village clean, well fenced and in good order.

Cemetery. Neat and clean, recently fenced.

Water. Water-holes, one at each end of the village, clean, shaded and newly fenced.

Plantations. Fair amount of damage caused by erosion, a poor plantation, but as clean as could be expected.

AIKABULUKA.

Village clean and well fenced.

Cemetery. Clean, tidy and newly fenced.

Water. Obtained from two Water-holes, one at each end of the village, clean, well shaded and fenced-in.

Plantations. Shared with Silo.

Night was spent at the SILO Rest House.

Tuesday, 20th December.

Proceeded up river to inspect Plantations, returning in the afternoon to inspect the new SILO village.

SILO.

The old village on the beach is being abandoned and a new village has been, or is being formed on a small hill, about 300 yards north-west of the old site. This undoubtedly is the best move Silo people have ever made, as the new site is ideal. The new area has been fenced in, planted, marked out and 26 Houses built and occupied, with another 10 under construction. The village is about 80 feet above sea-level, and the dimensions of the fenced in area, which occupies nearly the whole top of the hill, are 220 yds. long by about 160 yds. wide, two fresh water streams flow past the village, one on each side, and there are acres and acres of land, inland behind the village for the planting up of gardens, and by the results of what is being grown up there now, most fruits and vegetables should do well.

Obviously by the amount of work that has been put into the marking out of the village, making of paths, and draining of some, and the planting of Flowers and Shrubs, the village people are taking a great deal of interest in the venture, which to say the least is unusual for Silo People.

As the new village should be finished and the old one demolished by the time of my next Patrol along here, a plan of the new site will be included in that report.

The night was again spent at the Rest House.

Wednesday, 21st December.

On the instructions of the R.M.G.D. an extensive investigation was made of the living conditions, food, etc., of the people of all the Silo Villages, on which a separate report has been rendered.

As soon as the tide had turned, I left Silo and proceeded over the Cupola to Kerema, where I reported to the R.M.G.D. at 4 p.m.

A good deal of work had been done on the road over the Cupola, since my last crossing, and it is now in very fair condition, particularly that section controlled by the LORABADA people.

GENERAL REMARKS

Throughout the Patrol there was very little fault to find with the Villages, except for KARAMA, which was in a fearful mess on the outward trek, but had been put into very fair shape by the time of my return. Plantations on the whole were very good, and the right idea regarding the use of a plantation seems to be taking root along all this section of the Division, fuller information in this regard may be seen from the Plantation Report. Of course the knowledge that a general inspection Patrol was in the offing was undoubtedly the reason why so much work had recently been done in quite a number of the Villages and Plantations, but it could be seen that a lot of the people take a genuine interest in the welfare of their village and Plantations.

No Native refused and was obliged to carry on this Patrol, a daily summary of Carriers employed is attached.

E. J. Good

P.O.

18. 1. 39.

SUMMARY OF CARRIERS

October.

3rd.	KEREMA - SILO, SILO - UAMAI.	=	124
4th.	UAMAI - KARAMA, KARAMA - LELEFIRU. LELEFIRU - KUKIPI.	=	130
5th.	KUKIPI-LELEFIRU.	=	6
6th.	LELEFIRU-KUKIPI.	=	61
8th.	KUKIPI-MOTU MOTU.	=	30
9th.	MOTU MOTU-LESE, LESE-BIARU.	=	58
10th.	BIARU-IOKEA, IOKEA-OIAPU.	=	58
11th.	OIAPU-IOKEA.	=	22
13th.	OIAPU-IOKEA.	=	6
14th.	EA-BIARU.	=	25
15th.	BIARU-LESE.	=	23
17th.	LESE-MOTU & RETURN.	=	12
19th.	LESE-MOTU MOTU.	=	24
20th.	MOTU MOTU-KUKIPI.	=	24
22nd.	KUKIPI-MOVIAMI.	=	12
24th.	MOVIAMI-BEVERI CIRCUIT.	=	18

December.

2nd.	MOVIAMI-KUKIPI.	=	10
9th.	KUKIPI-MOVIAMI.	=	10
10th.	MOVIAMI-KUKIPI.	=	4
13th.	KUKIPI-POPALA.	=	12
14th.	KUKIPI-LELEFIRU.	=	29
15th.	LELEFIRU-KOARU.	=	29
16th.	KOARU-KARAMA.	=	28
17th.	KARAMA-UAMAI.	=	28
19th.	UAMAI-SILO.	=	28
21st.	SILO-KEREMA.	=	37

 843
Total number of Carriers used on Patrol

Escort: A.C. HIND G.D.
A.C. YARABU. E.D.
G.I. KIVAVIA

Mr. A.H.M. Rutledge.

Patrol.

You will please arrange to leave the station on Monday morning the 17th instant, principally for tax collecting West for 1938/39.

Your route will be to Vailala E. where you will collect the tax (only). Those taxables who cannot pay will be elected by Mc.P.O. Bensted for canoe crews up the Vailala River, and carrying.

From Vailala E. you will proceed up the Vailala R. to UPOIA, thence via HOKU, AHIA, PRAVORI, AROARO, KAIPIA, PAKPOKO, PAIVERA & MAIPA to the HURO villages. At each place there will be a revision of census (the last census was in 1929 - sheets herewith). At HURO you will go thoroughly into the population question, revising the census taken in 1920 - sheets herewith. Take spare forms of Census Sheets.

Thence you will descend to the coast and begin revision of census, tax-collecting, and paying of family bonus in the taxable villages. Time to pay tax for 1938/39 will, where necessary, be extended to March next, the final demand. Thereafter the tax West will always begin on October 1st of each year, and no second demand. Charge native who have not paid their 1937/38 taxes, and for that year only.

The matter of coconut planting must be given your best attention. File of papers herewith. H.E. the L.-G is watching the posit

There will, in Orokele Bay, be remissions of fines for wilful destruction of coconuts. This has come about by their defence that they were told by a (then) village councillor to destroy the trees, and they can be told this, if necessary. Purely a technicality.

Native Labour inspections will be made at Mr. Parke's, the Vaiviri and Maira Estates (separately), Mr. Drummond's and /raimiri. Take with you 20 unused Contracts and some Statement forms. And an official receipt book.

Annual prizes. If an ARUPE village has merit over others I should be inclined to tell the people that if they continue to improve the village they may be awarded the prize for 1939/40, payable this time next year. Ask if they would want money, tools or earnest endeavour must be made in relation to prize for best kept on, for 1938/39, to be awarded on your present patrol.

Rev
A.C. HIND
18/10/39

REPORT OF PATROL undertaken by R. F. M. Rutledge R.M. to MURO District and all coastal villages west of Kerema for the purpose of census revision, payment of family bonusses, collection of taxes for year 1938/9 and outstanding taxes, Courts for Native Matters, Courts of Petty Sessions, Native Labour Inspections, Native Plantations etc. etc..

Monday 17th. October 1938.

Under instructions from R.M. G.D. I had made preparations for the patrol but an early start was firstly prevented by heavy rain until 9.30 a.m. and secondly by the necessity of having to re-pack all goods and have same taken and stored in the store, the new house not being completed and it being very inadvisable to leave them in the old "rice-house".

Thus a start was not made until 12 o'clock - one canoe in charge of WARDER SEVESE making the crossing successfully but my canoe was overloaded and it was necessary to return and dump about 800 lbs. leaving A.C. WABABU to bring it over later. Even then the crossing was bad and had not SEVESE come back and given us shelter with a large canoe we would have swamped.

Unfortunately yesterday I must have jarred my right hip joint for this morning at Kerema and when we arrived at MBI at 3.30 p.m. I had great difficulty in walking - through a numbness rather than pain. Mr P.O. Bensted was at the Rest House and having secured sufficient carriers he moved off at 4 p.m.

A.C. WABABU arrived at 5 p.m. with the remainder of the gear. During the afternoon prepared plan of the new house at Kerema to enable the R.M. to give necessary instructions for its due completion.

Rest House poor - Barracks also poor.

The bicycle will be missed - it was intended to take it on patrol but the braising of the front fork to the shoulder had become very worn and was now so flexible that it was considered advisable to leave it behind rather than risk an inevitable nasty spill.

C.I. KIVAVIA and A.C.'s MIBO and WABABU accompany the patrol.

9 canoe paddlers used.

Tuesday 18th. October 1938.

Leg had not improved so decided to spend the day at MEI. Sent A.C. WARABU back to UARIFI for some witnesses in a poisoning case and spent most of the morning enquiring into it, subsequently sending it on to Kerema.

.C. BAGERR reported from Kerema at 11.30 a.m. and returned at 4 p.m. During afternoon suffered somewhat from fever and diarrhoea and went to bed.

Wednesday 19th. October 1938.

Leg much improved and fever gone so packed up and moved on to Keuru. Called on Mr and Mrs Drummond in passing and found them well but very downheartened about the price of copra.

V.C's NAHUI and KAHAMO reported and were ordered to build a new Rest House to replace the present one which was very bad.

Used 44 carriers from MEI

Used 5 carriers locally.

Thursday 20th. October 1938.

Many boys reported for carrying but tide delayed departure until 9 a.m. Passed KeaKea and Koialahu and arrived at Vailala East at 12 o'clock. Rest House here is an excellent one.

Found that Mr P.O. Bensted had moved on up the Vailala River this a.m. Heard about a recent inter-village assault trouble and made enquiries into it, and decided to return to Koialahu tomorrow to enquire more fully into it.

V.C's KAKI of Vailala East and HARSHO of Vailala West reported.

Used 43 carriers from Keuru and 5 locally.

Friday 21st. October 1938.

Sent half of my gear across to Vailala West and then took such tax as was available from Vailala East. Mr P.O. Bensted had taken 24 natives up River with him, many were away at work and at missions and only eight taxables remained. Two persistent tax defaulters were present and both were sentenced in C.P.S.

Packed up and moved by good canoe to Koialahu, arriving there at 12.30 p.m.

Enquired further into the assaults which occupied most of the afternoon, fining one native and sentencing 5 to varying terms of imprisonment.

Mr A.D. Drummond passed through on his way to his Vailala store at 3 p.m.

A small mail arrived from Kerema during the afternoon.
Councillor UBU of AROARO reported saying that all the roads are very much under water (the River being in flood) and I decided to postpone my visit there until my return from OROKOLO.
Koialahu Rest House good, Barracks fair, grounds cleaned.
Used 25 carriers this day.

Saturday 22nd. October 1938.

Sent A.C.MIRO with 7 prisoners to Kerema.
At 8.30 a.m. departed for Vailala West by canoe (using 14 carriers) and on arrival there found the necessary carriers awaiting me. Gear tied up and moved on to AUMA where the high tide made a long wait necessary and it was 3 p.m. before I arrived at OROKOLO.
An invitation came from Rev. Dewdney to join them at afternoon tea and I spent the remainder of the day with them.
Used 54 carriers this day.

Sunday 23rd. October 1938.

At OROKOLO on private correspondence. All ARIHAVA and OROKOLO V.C's reported and were told of my intended movements i.e. to MURO tomorrow and in due course to return to ARIHAVA for census, tax etc..
C.I.KIVAVIA returned to AUMA in connection with a charge of stealing against a recently discharged prisoner and returned at night with the prisoner and the stolen goods.
At night went to Rev. Dewdney for dinner etc..

Monday 24th. October 1938.

At OROKOLO until 12.30 p.m. looking into odd matters, Courts for Native Matters etc.. Sent V.C.HARHO to Kerema with prisoner, mail etc..
With 39 carriers moved off at 12.30 for MURO - road has been well cleaned but several bridges are needed across swampy portions and small creeks. It was very hot walking and I was glad to reach the MURO Rest House at 3.30 p.m. Rest House in fair condition and Barracks fair also.
Purchased a small quantity of native foods and made arrangements with V.C's and Councillors for census revision on the morrow.
Used 39 carriers this day.

Tuesday 25th. October 1938.

Started at 8 a.m. and went right through until 5 p.m. on census

revision and correction. These villages have not had any census additions or corrections since 1930 and at the present rate it will take at least three days to do the work. What does seem noticeable is that the people marry when very young and it seems to be rule for people off the coast. As does the betel nut habit seem to become very noticeable - not one per cent of those seen today were not chewing the nut and even young girls' mouths have that hard coarsened look of the perpetual chewer.

Letter received from Mr Johnston of Maira Plantation asking if I would be able to sign on 30 recruits for him - letter to him stating ability so to do and letter to Kerema for more forms.

At night again noticed that bull-roarers were being used as a curfew - on being questioned the V.C. said that he was responsible and that he was teaching the young men how to use the roarers.

Wednesday 26th. October 1938.

A.S.MIRO arrived at 9.30 a.m. with mail from Kerema. Before then and up to 5 p.m. engaged at census revision of more MURU Villages but work very slow as there have been many alterations and one still has to fight against the tendency of the people to hide children. Two were discovered so doing yesterday and as they were girls it is hard to understand - one could sympathise with a mother for trying to save her son from tax!

Thursday 27th. October 1938.

Continued on census revision and managed to complete same at 5 p.m. leaving only one village (NAIPA or AREHAYA) to be done later at PAIVIRA.

V.C.HAREHO returned from Kerema at 10 a.m. - a very good trip for a man well past his prime.

Friday 28th. October 1938.

Looked into odd outstanding matters and held Court for Native Matters all morning. A lot of talk about sorcery but at the Courts none of the previous evidence was forthcoming, the fear of making charges against a sorcerer in his presence being very noticeable.

Sent A.S. HARABU with 3 prisoners to Kerema at 2 p.m.

During the afternoon went by canoe (2 hour) and by a poor road (2 hour) to the village of HEBERE.

HARURE Village V.C. MVARO.

Village situated on Creek Bank and could be very neat and pretty. Now only the remains of old fences can be seen and a very heavy growth of weeds has been recently cut down. Has 24 houses and 1 dubu. About 100 yards to the east of the village is the cemetery - this has to be fenced and two houses there have to be removed. Village to be fenced and cleaned. It came as a surprise to be told that the last Government officer to visit there was Capt. Thompson presumably in 1926.

Returned to Rest House at 5 p.m. and knocked off for the day.

This day used 9 carriers.

Saturday 29th. October 1938.

Off at 8.30 a.m. on various village inspections - by fair road though bad bridge across creek (floating log type) firstly to -

KARURARU (MAITA) V.C. OURA -

Fences poor, village only half cleaned, has 16 complete houses, 1 dubu, and 4 houses in course of erection. Gave necessary orders for improvement. Cemetery to North of village badly marked and not fenced or cleaned - gave orders for this to be done. Saw no evidence of anyone having been buried there recently but also saw no sign in village. These people have a "Company" near BRE Company - to be cleaned.

then on to

KARIBARU No.2 (MIRIKAI) V.C. OURA -

Village half cleaned only - fences bad, dubu nearly fallen down and houses poor. Has eight completed houses, 1 incomplete and 1 dubu. Orders for improvement given and noted in V.C. book. A lot of the people are said to visit NBI but that place according to them has only two houses. Cemetery not cleaned or fenced - to be done. They have a Company near BRE - not cleaned and ordered to be done.

then back across the Creek by a good bridge this time to

MAHE Village V.C. OURA -

Village considerably improved since I last saw it in 1936. Houses fair and fences fair but village appears to be rarely used as the grounds have been totally overgrown with grass and there are no worn tracks. Dubu as usual very poor. Has eight completed houses, six incomplete houses and 1 dubu. Cemetery not cleaned or fenced - to be done. Company plantation near BRE to be cleaned.

Here I heard of another small village and proceeded downstream about a mile to

URIPAI - V.C. OURA -

Consists of four houses near a sago place. Houses bad, no fences and no attempt at cleaning. Necessary orders given.

From here returned through the sago patch and Mr Coghill's plantation to a big garden area and thence to Rest House which was reached at 12 a.m. After lunch I inspected

BRE - V.C. INA -

Village clean, well fenced and houses fair. Has 13 completed houses, 3 incompleting houses and 2 dubus. These people have a Company on the road to KARIBARU but it was not cleaned and necessary orders were given. Cemetery not fenced or cleaned.

Thence to KIRABU village which consists of two villages very close

together -

KIRABU No.1 - V.C.IFA -

Consists of 9 complete houses, 3 incomplete houses and no dubu. Village clean, fenced good (river used as fence on one side), houses fair. Cemetery to be fenced and cleaned - Company to be cleaned.

KIRABU No.2 - V.C.IFA -

Good clean village and fairly neat. Fences good and houses good, having 13 of these and 1 dubu. They use the same cemetery as No.1.

Returned to Rest House, packed up and at 2 p.m. left for PAIVERA.

Passed ARRHAVA (MURO) Village and found same to be in the midst of their annual clean up and did not inspect. Arrived at Paivera Rest House at 4 p.m. after a very hot walk. Rest House here fair and Barracks fair only. V.C. and Councillors reported as did a Councillor from KWAIWA for information as to my movements.

Used 4 carriers this day.

Sunday 30th. October 1938.

Village people at work very early on construction of latrine which they finished at 8 a.m.

Checked census of ARRHAVA (MURO) and was about to commence PAIVERA and KWAIWA when it was discovered that the wrong old census sheets had been brought. As a house to house census would have taken away long time and then been probably incorrect I decided against and held Court for Native Matters for the remainder of the day. Most of the cases were about pigs of the type where X kills a pig for a feast and gives half to Y with no mention of what payment he desires. Y subsequently makes some form of payment and X is rarely satisfied and wants Court. Decided to move back to ARRHAVA (beach) tomorrow and made arrangements for carriers.

Monday 31st. October 1938.

Packed up and gear tied up by 9 a.m. when carriers proceeded to ARRHAVA via CROKOLO and I with C.I.KIVAVIA inspected villages of PAIVERA and ARRHAVA (MURO) and then by a very little used track to reach ARRHAVA Rest House at 11.30 a.m.

PAIVERA (V.C.DOBI) -

Village generally very poor - to be cleaned and fenced. Ordered four houses to be completed and two to be rebuilt.

Cemetery not cleaned or fenced - to be done.

Company plantations (2) to be cleaned.

The road from here to ARRHAVA (MURO) had become a mire through very heavy rains and much traffic, and walking was very heavy and dirty.

ARSHAVA (MURO) - V.C. DOBI -

Consists of 6 houses, three old and unused dabus, two incomplete houses and 1 half built dabu. Orders were given for the general improvement of the village, such as re fences, cleaning, old dabus and old houses. Cemetery not cleaned or fenced - to be done. Company plantation to be cleaned.

In time a series of roads will have to be built in the Muro district as the present roads, though cleaned, are only a series of slippery log walks - time here hasn't marched on!

A good illustration is seen as to how new creeks are formed - the present MURO-ARSHAVA track has been so worn that now of an average width of four feet it has sunken some eighteen inches, and now is actually a semi-dry creek. And alongside the track is a creek a little more than four feet wide and this, years ago, must have been the original track.

All ARSHAVA Village Constables reported.

During the afternoon held Courts for Native Matters to complete MURO District matters and also had the old Court House, now an ugly and insecure shell, demolished.

Tuesday 1st. November 1938.

Sent a mail and some prisoners to Kerema by V.C. HARMHO.

Revising census all day and at 5.30 p.m. had only completed three villages. Finding husbands and wives is a very tedious job but well worth while as if united in the new census sheets a lot of future time and temper will be saved.

V.C. SARABU arrived from Kerema with a mail at 10 a.m.

Wednesday 2nd. November 1938.

Early morning a note arrived from N.M.A. BOKO-NAVO borne by three blood-bespattered PAIVERA boys, advising of a village fight last night. A.C.'s sent to bring in offenders and the natives sent to S.D.A. Mission for treatment though why the N.M.A.'s didn't treat them isn't understood.

Self on census revision until 9.30 a.m. when Mr Burke appeared. He had a little Native Labour work and then wanted my help with a road. As I myself had seen he used to take his truck along the front of KAVAVA Village between the fence and the Creek, but this week the heavy rain had caused the creek to straighten more and where he used to go is now creek. Thus his truck had to remain on the ARSHAVA side until a road could be made through the village fences. I went

with him, on the way inspecting his oil press, which was very interesting. In time he is going to have a nice little plant there and he mentions that in time he will be putting in a plant for the treatment of coconut fibre. Mr Johnston arrived from Laira very shortly afterwards and I had lunch with Mr Burke and Mr Coghill.

After lunch I went and inspected the area around the village and found that the most suitable and practicable road would be to the rear of the village so instructions were given for the making of a laneway through the top end of the village and for the clearing away of much of the rubbish to the rear of the village. It will not be necessary to cut down any trees and the loss of use of land and inconvenience to the natives is practically nil.

Returned to Rest House and made arrangements with Mr Johnston to do his native labour work in the morning. Then held Court for Native Matters until 6 p.m. the case over the fighting last night in AIVWA taking most of the time.

N.M.A. BOKO-NAVO reported and said that the fight was very astonishing. He says that men, women and children joined in, inasmuch as a man would break his club and immediately be handed another.

Thursday 3rd. November 1938.

At work on correspondence etc. with Kerema until 9 a.m. when Mr Johnston appeared with 31 natives to be signed on, 30 of them for MARIBOI. Checked them off and then completed Kerema despatches, C.MIPO and a number of prisoners leaving for there at 11 a.m. Was then occupied until 4 p.m. making out Contracts of Service, Notes etc. and was on my way to Okokolo with them when Mr Burke arrived in his truck. He wished to lay a complaint against a native for assault, native duly arrested and court arranged for the morrow. After obtaining Mr Johnston's signatures to the Contracts I called on Mr and Mrs Nolan of the S.D. Mission and later inspected the road made by the KAVAV people. This was satisfactory and some tobacco was paid for the work done.

Returned to Rest House at 7 p.m.

Friday 4th. November 1938.

Letters to Kerema re Contracts of Service etc.. Had started on census revision Kaibukabu village when Messrs Burke and Coghill arrived - C.S. against one employee for assault. They

departed at 12.30 p.m. Completed forms etc.. and sent prisoners and mail to Kerema by an OROKOLO Village Constable.

V.C.KAMI of Veilala last arrived at 1 p.m. with Kerema and Southern mail.

Started again on census at 2 p.m. but soon after starting Rev. Mr Dewdney arrived and stayed discussing various matters until 5 p.m. At present rate of progress with the patrol will be a very long one.

Saturday 5th. November 1938.

Commenced early and having no interruptions completed the revision of the census of all AREHAVA villages by 1 p.m.

After lunch was occupied until six o'clock with Courts for Native Matters.

Sunday 6th. November 1938.

Raining all day so spent the time writing letters, etc..

Monday 7th. November 1938.

Took names of new babies, paid family bonuses and collected taxes from four Arehava Villages, working right on to dark - such taxable natives as are in the villages paying up well.

A.C.'s MIRO and KURUVIA arrived from Kerema at 2 p.m. with the usual small mail and a few needed stores.

Tuesday 8th. November 1938.

Up early and taking a few taxes from natives working on the L.M.S. plantation near Iuro at 6.30 a.m.

Later BOARO V.C. reported saying that he and his friends had been at a feast at NQMI and had been assaulted - A.C.'s WAPABU and KURUVIA sent back with him to make enquiries and bring the offenders here.

Completed taking new names, paying family bonuses and collecting taxes at 1 p.m., finding that in the AREHAVA group taxes were coming in well and were mostly up to date, though there are many natives, including Black-listed natives, away at work.

In afternoon with a crew of 6 proceeded by canoe to NQMI and inspected village -

NQMI (V.C.AIKRAVI) -

Village is vaguely disappointing, probably due to the dirty look of all houses. The village is well fenced, very clean and an effort to beautify it is being made with flowering shrubs. Had 10 fair to medium houses, ordered 2 to be rebuilt.

There is no cemetery it being said that the dead are taken back to their original village i.e. KAIBUKABU and then buried in small plots in the bush.

From here I proceeded along the beach to the mouth of the ALICE Rr. to find a scattered collection of some ten houses, some good and some poor, said to be used by the IOMI people for fishing. These were close to IOMI Company plantations a report on which are attached to this report.

On return to the Rest House I noticed that part of the "made" beach had been surveyed by the natives to distinguish which belonged to MARUA and which to KAIBUKABU and this land will be used for the new "Companies" which will be ready for planting early next year.

Arrived at the Rest House at 7 p.m. to find V.C. MAIARUKU of OROKOLO having returned from Kerema with a small mail and also a few letters from Mr Johnston of Maira, a few of his workmen having been

unwittingly arrested in connection with the AROARO-IOMI trouble. This day used 6 carriers.

Wednesday 9th. November 1938.

Started Courts for Native Matters at 8.30 a.m. and continued with same right through to 5 p.m. a fair number of cases being settled out of Court.

The AROARO-IOMI affair turned out to be a lot less serious than first reported though it is more than likely that some of the facts were not disclosed.

Thursday 10th. November 1938.

Sent A.C. WAMBEU and prisoner to Kerema and then by canoe (7 paddlers) proceeded to a place called LAI'I, about one and a half canoe hours from ARBHAVA. Here there are two houses on one dry patch and a group of five bad houses on another patch. Two old MURO men live here permanently and at other times for short periods of a day or so other MURO people come down for fishing purposes and to make sago.

Councillors MARUPAI and HUVOKO were here to meet me and my canoe crew turned out to be a contentious crowd who wanted these MURO people evicted. After a long discussion it seems that the ARBHAVA people have permitted MURO occupation here for years but have recently become annoyed over the alleged theft of some sago trees. The gardens here and the growing coconuts belong to MURO people and while there is a very large patch of common (self-planted) sago, there is also a big patch of sago planted by ARBHAVA people. I further understand that when the ARBHAVA peoples were at TOPO, this spot LAI'I used to be the old meeting place for trading between the MAIUA and the TOPO

peoples. I told those interested that the matter would be mentioned but I do not think the IULO people should be barred from here. That the ARHAVA people really seem to want is a yearly rental!

Leaving here continued by canoe to the mouth of the ALME River where previously there used to be a group of houses. However I found that the point has been washed away and now there are only two houses - one permanently occupied by an ARHAVA old couple and the other house periodically occupied by people from IANI.

Continued out to sea a little to round another point and so enter the NOMI Creek and to return thereby to the ARHAVA Rest House, reaching there at 2.30 p.m.

Packed up and with 30 carriers moved to OKOKOLO. I did not inspect the other ARHAVA villages as there are a lot of outstanding orders for village improvement and I considered it better to give the people every opportunity to prepare the land, nuts, etc. for more Company coconut plantations on next patrol. However I passed through the villages and found them to be well fenced and clean, but houses generally poor.

Inspected old Companies at Norihairu and IOKU - reports attached.

Settled in at OKOKOLO Rest House and found the A.C. Barracks uninhabitable - new barracks to be commenced tomorrow.

Rev. Downey called on his way back from IOKU and stayed until dark - he leaves by the apuan Chief for Port Moresby to attend conference. This day used 37 carriers.

Friday 11th. November 1938.

Sent S.C. KUNEVIA to MBI to arrest a persistent tax defaulter from IOKU, his practice being to go to MBI when a patrol goes to IOKU and to return to IOKU when the patrol nears MBI.

Then with V.C.'s, Councillors and local men revision of census was commenced, a very tedious job as HARIBAREVA and HOPAIKU are two distinct villages within one fence and have intermarried considerably. Revising the census this way is taking about four times as long as the other method but it is bringing to light a number of previously unregistered children and several taxable natives. Continued until 5 p.m. when a heavy wind and rain storm made further work impossible. New Barracks for V.C.'s completed by 5 p.m.

Saturday 12th. November 1938.

S.C. MIVO sent to Vailala West to pick up a bag of rice - 2 carriers.

A returning prisoner brought a small mail from Kerema.
Continued with census revision and finally finished all OROKOLO
villages at 4 p.m. Then completed a few small outstanding matters
and knocked off at 5.30 p.m.

Sunday 13th. November 1938.

Private correspondence in the morning.

A.E. KURUVIA returned from MBI with the tax defaulter and A.C.
KARISU returned from Kerema with a small mail and a few stores.
Had lunch with Rev. and Mrs Dewdney and was on my way with them to
church at 3.30 p.m. when a series of "wounded" started to arrive
for treatment. It appears one man attacked the leader of his clan
(thinking such leader was playing fast and loose with his wife)
with his knife. A couple of nasty gashes were received by the
leader before his son interferred and clubbed his father's
assailant several times, knocking him to the ground. The leader
then returned to the fray and, until others joined in, hacked away
at his attacker with a pen-knife. Arrests were promptly made by
the A.C.'s who then brought them all along for treatment.

Rev. Dewdney occupied in treating the wounds for over half an hour
after which I accompanied him to Church, a good roll up and of
course the sermon dealt with the most recent event.

Had dinner with the Dewdney's at night but had fever and went home
early.

Monday 14th. November 1938.

Feeling very washed out in the morning. However made enquiries
into the assaults of yesterday and also held C.P.S. against the
tax defaulter, later preparing mail and forwarding same together
with the various parties to Kerema in charge A.C. MISO.

Then proceeded with checking the names and age-ing the new arrivals
but as the people did not know I already had the names it took a
long time to clean up the stragglers and those who previously had
been missed.

Messrs Howell and Nolan (S.D.s) called in on their way to PARIPOKO.
At 2 p.m. feeling very off colour again so went to bed. Rev Dewdney
called later to enquire etc..

Tuesday 15th. November 1938.

Fever still about but after some delay caused by having to finish

11

some 20 odd R HAVA children for playing truant from school, and the non-attendance of the money women and children (hastened considerably by putting the waiting taxable natives, who I think wanted the tax to be collected first, on to pulling down the old Rest House which had been left standing when the new one was built) I paid family bonuses and collected such taxes as the natives had, or rather said they had. The rumour has spread that there is as yet no prosecution for non-payment of 1938/9 taxes and natives are not paying, even though many have the money.

Messrs Howell and Nolan called on returning from TAPIPOKO.

Letters to Messrs Nolan and Dewdney re taxable natives.

Was preparing for bed when Mr Coghill called. He stayed until 11 p.m. recalling the wild and adventurous days of early Papua, being very interesting even if possible slightly inaccurate.

Wednesday 16th. November 1938.

Fever conditions still persist. After Messrs Howell and Nolan had called in connection with taxables and continued on to AREHAVA and IARI, was engaged with Courts for Native Matters and tax matters until 12 o'clock.

Then I commenced enquiries re land to be purchased from the natives for Mr Burke - KARA (the one who had reported to M. Kerema the offer of a 5/- bribe) saying he would like a yearly rental of 25.5/- and as he was only a part owner it did not look too promising.

However, at 2 p.m. I went & surveyed a piece about 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ chains by 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ chains wide of unused and unplanted newly made sand beach, and then found the owners. Then from three o'clock until 6 o'clock I talked about purchase and lease, offered prices of up to £2.5/- for an outright purchase and up to 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. tobacco as a yearly rental but KARA was contemptuous of all offers. Incidentally I mentioned to KARA that it would be very interesting to find out who was really the owner of such new made lands, whether it vested in the Crown or in the owners of the land in front of which it makes, or whether in a case like this, where the land in front was already vested in the Crown, it vested in the ^{original} owners of the land i.e. the natives. I also mentioned it was definitely in the natives' interests to sell or lease. Mr Burke had to have a loading place because of the would be long carry (providing KARA allowed them to pass through his land) thus

adding to the cost of production and reduction of amount paid for raw products. Carried to absurd lengths KARA could probably fence his land, and get his friends to do likewise which would then allow Burke only two outlets from his site, one by way of the creek by canoe, and the other along the foreshore to the other bank of the Creek.

KARA still refused to have anything to do with either a sale or a lease and at 6 p.m. I sent him away so that I could talk with the other owners, who evidently afraid of KARA, immediately said they would follow KARA and if he sold or leased they would follow suit. Informed Mr Burke on the present state of affairs (he being in bed very sick with abscesses in his ears) and then on my way back to the Rest House had A.C.KURUVIA and Court Interpreter search KARA's gear for sorcery charms etc. as it was very evident he was either a sorcerer or a small chief. Two charms, obviously, sorcery charms, were found.

It was after dark before I returned to the Rest House.

During the morning Rev. Dewdney had called desiring information re mandates - he having three very young babies on the Mission and being desirous of protecting them from assertive relatives who would in all likelihood take them to the village where from lack of food and attention they would die. On looking up the Native Children's Ord. I thought I could give such mandates but as I had no previous experience I advised him to refer the matter to Kerema.

Thursday 17th. November 1938.

At 8.30 a.m. I went to the L.M.S. Mission to return some books and also to get back my copy of Seligmann's "Melanesians of British New Guinea" (to check up if possible on sorcery charms). Mention was made by me of KARA with reference to sorcery and Mr Dewdney then told me that KARA had been to see him last night and told him that he was accused of sorcery, had in fact been blamed for Mr Burke's sore ears and that the search last night had convinced KARA that Messrs Burke and Coghill had informed me of his sorcery powers. After talking it over I sent for KARA and told him his accusations against Messrs Burke and Coghill were unjust and that the search was a result of the other natives' attitude and genuine defence towards him and that he must either have some chieftain powers or was a sorcerer. He ex-

plained that sorcerers never cut their hair, never washed etc.. but he said he was a small dubu chief and that the sorcery charms were solely used for the blessing of the large canoes before their departure on trading missions. Incidentally Mr Dewdney offered to buy one of these charms but was very promptly and firmly turned down by KARA, despite Mr Dewdney's assertion that the Church would be its resting place and the powers of the charms should thereby be greatly added to by Higher Powers.

When asked about his chief KARA of course knew nothing.

He later said that he did not want to lease the land but was perfectly willing to sell if the price was right, so he was told to come to the Rest House during the afternoon with the other owners, when a price would be discussed.

Returned to the Rest House at 11 a.m. to find Mr Coghill awaiting me - tea, a little native labour work and one complaint took until lunch. During lunch Papuan Chief arrived from West but did not stay long.

A.C. MIRO returned from Kerema at 2 p.m.

KARA and the other owners of the land (I decreased the area by nearly half) arrived and on being asked a price were quite satisfied at £2:10/- which was but 5/- more than I had offered yesterday, and the deal was closed, another visit being made to the land for re-measurement and placing of marks.

Despite satisfactory settlement of this I think a legal opinion should be given as to the ownership of land which makes. Mr Dewdney's unofficial opinion was that the natives considered that land which makes in front of a mission site is regarded by the natives as "Mission" it being their opinion that the missions were definitely for the natives' benefit. On the same argument Government land is purchased for the purpose of making money and when land makes in front of these sites, those wanting the land should be financial enough to purchase it. In marking the land it was found that overnight the owner of the land adjacent to that of KARA had planted three coconut trees on KARA's ground so it is quite probable that in years to come a complaint will be made that when the land was purchased three coconut trees were not paid for.

Friday 18th. November 1938.

Held C.P.S. with reference to stealing coconuts already purchased and

then re-selling them and convicted the defendant.

After morning tea sent A.C. APANU to Kerema with mail etc..

Then after a little C.N.M. went back to IOKU and re-inspected Company plantations for cleanliness finding that one native had taken a risk and not bothered to clean his line - he will come before the court tomorrow. Then re-inspected the ^{ground} underneath next the two dubus in IOKU for cleanliness, it being the habit of most of these people to make the village ~~somewhat~~ spotlessly clean but leave the ground under and around the dubus in a frightful state. One dubu had cleaned but the other had neglected and the offenders will also be prosecuted. Passed through HANIPAR VA and HOPAIKU Villages on return to Rest House and found same clean but again the surroundings of the dubus were very neglected.

Decided to move on to HERAKERA so packed up and with 32 carriers left at 3 p.m. to have a very hot walk along the beach. HERAKERA Rest House and Barracks good. V.C. NARE reported.

After settling in held Court for Native Matters - assault over non-payment for a duck - and after hearing the evidence I gave the defendant two months I.H.L. Apparently this was unexpected as he then informed the Court that the whole evidence was fabricated and that the trouble was really over his knife. In marking leaves so that they could "play cards" some small boys had lost his knife. The borrower had accused one of stealing it and received a hiding for his accusation this apparently leading to a general affray in which the Village Constable only became interested after receiving a blow from the defendant. Have charged the Village Constable and another with giving false evidence and have remanded them until more witnesses are available.

Rev. Dewdney called on his way back from Auma and stayed until dark. Used 32 carriers this day.

Saturday 19th. November 1938.

Held C.N.M. for an adultery case and then proceeded with revision of census of Nohoro, Pakowabu, Biai etc.. until 2 p.m. when being off colour with fever, went to bed.

Had meant to visit S.D.A. Mission at night for dinner but it was impossible.

Sent Belepa V.C. to OROVOI for witnesses etc..

Sunday 20th. November 1938.

Feeling much better. Repacking boxes and at correspondence during morning.

In the afternoon proceeded along beach to near RIVIDI Village where I saw several Company plantations belonging to Orokelo groups. All looked quite good, trees well lined and spaced and well grown, but they were densely overgrown with scrub and orders were given for cleaning to commence tomorrow.

Monday 21st. November 1938.

Took new names, paid family bonuses and collected taxes from all villages, finishing at 12 a.m. after which settling a few outstanding matters.

After lunch proceeded to site of L.M.S. Mission and surveyed an area for them, this taking quite a long time and an interruption through Mr Coghill passing on his way to Vailala not helping. This completed returned to Rest House and after considerable discussion etc. finally agreed with the owners on a price of £4.8/- - transfer completed and moneys paid over.

Then held a C.P.C. for tax defaulters, working until dark.

A letter from Mrs Drummond advising that owing to the low price of copra she did not wish to proceed with the extension to the Karo Karo trading site.

MAIRA passed on her way West.

All Orokelo natives cleaning their Company plantations to the east of here.

A.C.KURUVIA arrived from Kerema at 8 p.m. - a good trip for one day.

Tuesday 22nd. November 1938.

Held Courts for Native Matters all morning until 12 o'clock when I prepared papers, answered correspondence and at 1 p.m. sent A.C. WIRABU to Kerema with same, prisoners and carriers.

After lunch went and inspected

HIRAKERA Village V.C. NAPI -

Village well fenced and cleaned and quite neat, though this is achieved by flowering shrubs rather than regularity of houses. Did not inspect too closely, houses fair only. A new village is to be built nearer the sand beach.

Then inspected

HIRAKERA Company Plantations - see separate report.

Returned to Rest House and packed up but owing to the stupidity of the Village Constable who despite all other Orokelo village men

being quite close and working at their plantations thought only
PAKORABU and HIRAKOJA carriers were to be used, was delayed in depart-
ure to NJIA until 4 p.m. Carriers proceeded along beach - I by way of
what is known as "Mr Murray's Cumnuts", inspecting them (see separate
report), and then inspecting

HARIBAREVA Company No.1 - see separate report

KAVAVA Companies Nos. 1 & 2 - see separate report

Adjoining these is another bunch of plantations and there are many
trees but cleaning had not been done and so was unable to inspect and
count, even roughly, as the bush had grown up very densely and
visibility was about three trees. Have ordered the cleaning to be done
and I will re-inspect on Sunday.

Continued then along the beach having a look at the villages of
PAKORABU, MIRI-HAIALI (2) and BIAI - villages generally fair.

Arrived at [redacted] at 6.30 p.m. and paid off carriers.

Rest House and Barracks good - V.C. APABE reported.

This day used 28 carriers.

Wednesday 23rd. November 1938.

Commenced census revision at 8 a.m. and completed same at 1 o'clock,
finding several missed people, and finding that the further away from
OROKOLO proper the less rigid becomes the rule that widowers can only
marry widows.

During the afternoon took names of new additions, paid family bonuses
and collected taxes. Being aware that there is supposed to be no
connection between husband and wife while a child is at breast made
me suspicious of one applicant for family bonus - subsequent
enquiries proving the No.4 child of the applicant to be the No.1
child of the second wife.

Held a little C.N.M. knocking off at dusk.

Thursday 24th. November 1938.

After breakfast held C.N.M. until 10 o'clock, but matters all trivial
Then leaving A.C.'s to pack up gear etc. I proceeded to

UMA Company Plantation - see separate report

AUMA Village - V.C. APABE -

Good neat village, very clean and
fences good. One of the only villages with pivoting gates.

Then with 28 carriers moved to Vailala West - roads very clean -
inspecting en route -

RUAPE Company Plantations Nos. 1 & 2 - see separate report
and visiting villages of Arrupe Nos 1 & 2, Arihukirangi, Kukiri Nos, 1
and 2, Hiloi and Vailala West, to reach the Pest House at the latter
village at 2.30 p.m.

Started revision of census at 4 p.m. and continued until dusk.

A.C. SARABU reported in at 7.30 a.m. with a mail and 2 carriers with
some needed rice.

Used 30 carriers this day.

Friday 25th. November 1938.

Answering correspondence etc. with Kerema until 10.30 a.m. when A.C.
MIRU sent off with same, prisoners etc..

Then continued with census revision all day, the Vailala River working
westward having caused many removals and tracing them all is a big job.
Very heavy rain nearly all night.

Saturday 26th. November 1938.

People very tardy in coming for taking names of new babies, family
bonuses etc. and when they finally did arrive and work was being done,
Mr Coghill arrived with a boy to be signed on.

He left at 11 a.m. continued with family bonuses and tax collection
completing same at 1 p.m. - tax collection practically nil.

After lunch fixed up various outstanding matters and held C.N.M. -
later held C.P.S. for two tax defaulters, experiencing a typical case
of how deliberately irritating these natives can be. Asked at the
commencement of the Court did he have his money he replied no - asked
later for his defence he produced the necessary tax money!

At 4 p.m. went by canoe up the River to inspect the Vailala Company
plantation, it being quite close to VEIVIRI plantation. Landed and
found only one row cleaned so returned to Pest House and warned the
people that a second visit would be made and prosecution would follow
if not then cleaned.

At night had a discussion with the V.C. and the ex-V.C. about various
matters - both agreed that the delay this morning was due to distance
and they said when it was necessary to build a new Pest House it would
be built near the new villages, very few people now being on the River.
This day used 8 carriers.

Sunday 27th. November 1938.

Up early and departed with C.I. KIVAVIA and A.C. KURUVIA on tour of

of various Company plantations. Proceeded via HILOI Village near which I inspected

HILOI Company No.1 - see separate report

then through Kukipi Village No.1, across bridge, through Kukipi No.2 and passing Arihukirapi Village inspected

VAILALA WEST & ARIHUKIRAPI Company No.1 - see separate report continued along road, crossed bridge and inspected

HILOI Company No.2 - see separate report

AUUAPE Company No.3 - see separate report

Then through AUMA Village (where I noticed a girl having a new skirt trimmed - with just as much coyness etc. as girls of a different colour trying on a new frock) and along the beach to

KAVAVA & HARIRARUA Company No.1 - see separate report

Here it was noticed that a small steamer was leaving ONOKOLO where it was said by natives to have anchored last night - I could not place it.

Then re-inspected some of the other Companies, after which a return was made through PAKOWABU to BIAI where I inspected

BIAI Company No.1 - see separate report

and then continued by passable track to HAIALI Village, a matter of less than ten minutes. This track was taken on advice of C.I.KIVAVIA who said there were no creeks on it as against two on the track from PAKOWABU - there were certainly no creeks but there was at least a quarter of a mile of swamp!

HAIALI Village (V.C.PARAPARA) -

Good clean village, well cleaned, fences good and houses generally good. Unfortunately as in most of the ONOKOLO villages the dubu is decreasing in size, rows of tall uprights being evidence of its once greatness.

A little along the road to Veiviri Plantation I inspected

HAIALI Company Plantation - see separate report

and later reached the plantation where I boarded the canoe - 6 paddlers - I had sent up earlier in the day to await me. Arrived back at the Rest House at 2 p.m.

After lunch packed up and with seven paddlers crossed the River to Vailala East - Rest House and Barracks good - V.C.KAKI reporting. Was surprised to hear the strains of "Hallelujah, I'm a Tramp" coming from Church - it must have started as a hymn.

... latter stood off the mouth of the river for some while but did not come in and at dusk was making towards Kerema.
Used 18 carriers this day.
Monday 28th. November 1938.

A.C. MIRO reported in with mail from Kerema at 8 a.m.
Commenced revision census of Vailala East when Mr Nolan called and stayed for half an hour, he being on his way to Belepa.
Continued after his departure until 4 p.m. when I held Court for Native matters against Oroko natives who had neglected to clean their lines in the Company plantations - fining 11 of them 1/- each.
Discussed Company plantations with previous defendants until dusk.
C.I. KIVAVIA complained that his leg was sore again and permission was given for him to visit Belepa tomorrow for an injection.

Tuesday 29th. November 1938.

Held C.M. for a case of adultery from Upper Vailala, and a "neglect to clean roads" case from IOBI, after which C.I. KIVAVIA went to Belepa.

Started further census revision but was interrupted by a crowd of Belepa people (including V.C.) arriving to say that Maira plantation signed on labour had abducted a woman from ARURAKIA the previous evening and this morning in attempting to make arrests they had been badly beaten up by the signed on labour. Sent A.C.'s MIRO and KUVVIA to Maira with explanatory letter for Mr Johnston, and to make necessary arrests. They returned at dusk with some 12 natives, all of these looking the worse for the fight.

Continued with census revision until it was completed during the afternoon and from then on was occupied with correspondence with Kerema.

C.I. KIVAVIA returned at 8 p.m. with a good description of the MAIRA-BELEPA trouble. It appears that one native - a boss boy - wanted a widow who didn't want him, so making use of the opportunity created by all male natives being away working on the West coast, he descended with his team to the village and took the woman. Two boys heard her call out and these were attacked by the work boys. The woman was taken to Maira. This morning the Belepa had collected a team of boys and gone to Maira, all natives being armed, and of course the result was a fight in which the Belepa people came off second best.

Wednesday 30th. November 1938.

Started early with several Courts for Native Matters brought by other Village Constables.

Then took names of new babies and paid money women - quite a number here.

After which, all parties concerned in the MAIRA-BURIPA trouble having arrived, due enquiry was made into the matter and it was decided that, as a lot depended on whether the root of the matter should be treated as abduction or not, it was advisable for the matter to go to Kerema and, papers being duly prepared, they departed at 1 p.m. accompanied by A.C. YAPABU.

A.C. KUMUVIA was sent via Maira advising Mr Johnston and to get some more concerned and to then continue to Kerema, when under instructions from R.M. he severs his connection with this patrol.

Continued with collection of tax - very poor - after which held C.S.S. for tax defaulters and Court for Native Matters until 6 p.m. One matter from AROMO was rather amusing - it appears that a fairly newly married couple were having a little trouble - the wife would not allow the husband his conjugal rights or cook his food until he had paid for her and the husband would not pay until he had sampled such rights. She averred that one night when she was asleep the husband did "have" her, which the husband denied. I have heard of native women sleeping through the act so it may be true. I am afraid I could not give the couple much assistance in settling their affairs.

Thursday 1st. December 1938

Held Courts for Native Matters until 11 o'clock when, with a crew of nine, I crossed the River and went by road to inspect

VAILALA EAST Company Plantations Nos. 1 & 2 - see separate report

Then returned to Vailala West and continued by canoe up River where I inspected

VAILALA EAST "Mr Murray" Companies - see separate report and a little further up River

VAILALA JOINT Company Plantation - see separate report

Arrived back at the Rest House very hot. After a spell the village of Vailala East situated on the point, finding same very poor and in need of many improvements, which were ordered, and then inspected

VAILALA EAST Company No 3 - see separate report

Then inspected the other two villages of Vailala East and found them to be fair only. Ordered several new houses and a general improvement. Returned to Rest House to find several more Courts for Native Matters awaiting me but as it was dusk some were postponed until tomorrow. Used 9 carriers this day.

Friday 2nd. December 1938.

Diari entered River at dawn.

With 30 carriers moved to Koialahu, en route inspecting AIVAU Village which was quite satisfactory and

AIVAU Company Plantation - see separate report

and Koialahu village, not very clean and can stand much improvement. Rest House fair, Barracks and Latrines new.

After a spell started Court for Native Matters on various matters and was engaged on same until 3 p.m. when I did a little private mail and sent same to Belepa to catch the Diari. Afterwards continued on C.N.M. until dark.

Expected an A.C. from Kerema but he did not arrive.

Used 30 carriers this day.

Saturday 3rd. December 1938.

Checked census of AIVAU and KOIALAHU until 1 p.m. when I had to give into fever for a while. Continued at 3 p.m. and completed census at 5. There is a big mix-up here between these people and HILAU people and they take some sorting out.

A.C. MIRO sent to Kerema with papers, prisoners etc..

A.C. ARABU returned from Kerema at 2 p.m.

Sunday 4th. December 1938.

A.C. ARABU to HUIVA with £20 in notes to see if he can get necessary silver for payment of money women.

Carrier to Maira with Kerema mail.

Took names new additions and collected taxes - about five boys paying the current year. Held a few Courts for Native Matters.

At 11.30 a.m. went and inspected

KOIALAHU Company Plantation No. 1 - see separate report

KOIALAHU Company Plantation No. 2 - " " "

HAROPA Company Plantation No. 1 - " " "

and also BERRAR Village - small but well fenced and cleaned and houses

fair.

Returned to Rest House and moved with 33 carriers to HARORA, seeing on the way Harora Coy. No. 2 but as it is a very poor one and very small it was not inspected.

Rest House and Barracks good.

A.C. TABAU returned from Huiva at 3 p.m. with the silver and some needed stores.

During remainder of afternoon revised census of KAROKANO and HARORA villages.

33 carriers used this day.

Monday 5th. December 1938.

Mr Howell with Mrs Howell and Mrs Nolan called on their way to the DIAI which left for Port Moresby about 9 a.m.

Completed revising census and then paid family bonus to Koialahu and Aivan women and then to those in the HARORA Group. Collected only a few taxes.

After lunch held C.N.M. (very little) and C.P.S. for tax defaulters (1937/8) and then packed up and with 26 carriers moved on to BELEPA, inspecting firstly

HARORA Village - V.C.KAI RU - Fences good, houses fair, well cleaned and generally good.

HUI Villages - V.C.KAIRU - Fairly good, well cleaned and houses fair - needs more fencing. L.M.S. property badly in need of some cleaning.

HUI Company Plantation No. 1 - see separate report

POIVA Village - V.C.HARPA - Small, compact and clean. Houses fair, fences fair but dubu very bad.

POIVA Company Plantation No. 1 - see separate report

HEIAU Village - V.C.HAPEA - Small, clean and well fenced. Houses fair but now this is a very small village.

HEIAU Company Plantation No.1 - see separate report

Road to Belepa in most places very clean and in fair condition, there being a few spots where pigs have been rooting which need attention.

Arrived at Belepa at 6.30 p.m. - Rest House good, Barracks also.

Tuesday 6th. December 1938.

Revised census, took names of new additions, paid family bonuses

and collected the few taxes tendered.

A.C.MIRO arrived from Kerema with mail and stores at 11 a.m.

This day used 9 carriers.

Wednesday 7th. December 1938.

Sent A.C. SARABU to Kerema during early morning.

Held Court for Native Matters until 12 a.m. when I packed up and with 30 carriers moved to Maira Plantation, inspecting en route the villages HIIOI, OPA and APUPARIA and also the half cleaned Company plantation of the APUPARIA people situated near the top end of Maira Plantation.

A count was impossible and a report on same was impossible.

Was met by Mr Johnston at Maira and accepted his invitation to camp with him.

Native Labour work during afternoon.

This day used 30 carriers.

Thursday 8th. December 1938.

Held native labour inspections of Maira and Veiviri Plantations and finally moved into IORI Rest House at 3 p.m.

Very heavy rain prevented much work being done during the afternoon.

Used 32 carriers this day.

Friday 9th. December 1938.

Revised census, took new names, paid family Bonuses and collected a few (very few) taxes from IORI, LEPOKERA and HAIALI villages. As eight months have passed since last collection and Maira and Veiviri employ on an average at least 40 cases monthly, it seems that many of these natives have their taxes but are not handing same over until they will be prosecuted for default.

Held C.N.M. early morning sending V.C. MAIAKORE to Kerema with depositions, prisoners etc., A.C.MIRO being on the sick list.

After completion of tax work held C.N.M. until dark, leaving more for tomorrow.

Saturday 10th. December 1938.

Held C.N.M. until 10.30 a.m. when I proceeded to Lepokera and inspected that village, it being a very neat one, very well cleaned, houses good and regular, and fences good. Roads good and well kept.

On return inspected

IORI Company Plantation - see separate report

IORI Village - V.C. PARAPARA - Village not very clean, fences fair and houses also fair only. Needs much improvement.

TEPOKERA Company Plantation - see separate report

Packed up and with 30 carriers left IORO at 12.30 p.m. by canoe to reach Koialahu at 3.30 p.m. and then along the beach to arrive at KBAKA at 4.30 p.m.

Rest House and Barracks good. V.C.H VOB reported.

Also inspected en route

HELAU Company Plantation - see separate report

and the villages of EPBEAMO and KBAKA, both of which were satisfactory.

Used 30 carriers this day.

Sunday 11th. December 1938.

V.C. MAIAKULE reported in early from Kerema with mail etc..

Revised census, took names of new additions, paid money women and collected £2 tax - no one paying for the current year.

Held C.N.M. and knocked off at 1 p.m.

At about 3 p.m. packed up and moved with 28 carriers to Keuru, inspecting en route

KBAKA & EPBEAMO Company No. 2 - see separate report

NAKOMA & OBAHUHU Company No. 1 - " " "

NAKOMA & OBAHUHU Company No. 2 - " " "

Paid off carriers and made arrangements for the morrow.

Rest House and Barracks good.

Self with fever again and so to bed.

This day used 28 carriers.

Monday 12th. December 1938.

P.C. arrived at HUIVA about 8 a.m. and left shortly afterwards.

Sent V.C. HAREA of HELAU to Kerema with mail, depositions and prisoners.

Then with many Councillors, helpers etc. revised census of HRAHARA, OVAVA, OBAHUHU, IAKOMA and APURUHU, this occupying time until lunch.

After lunch some 23 natives from Huiva Plantation arrived and advances of wages were paid over to them, contracts endorsed and taxes collected.

After they were finished I continued with census revision but did not complete, leaving PEKOI, HIRU and DOBHOHO to be done tomorrow.

Tuesday 13th. December 1938.

Completed census revision, then checked names of new babies, paid

family bonuses, and after lunch, collected such few taxes as were offered.

Three more natives from Huiva for advances and these were fixed up. Inquired into outstanding matters etc. until dark.

V.C.HARMA of HELAU reported on his return from Kerema.

Wednesday 14th. December 1938.

Went early to OBAUHU where a plot of land was marked out and surveyed for the L.M.S. and subsequently purchased.

Leaving here went by poor track to LAKOMA (V.C.KAHARO) and then by good road to OVAVA (V.C.KAHARO), both of these villages being in very good order and condition, and then to

OVAVA Company Plantation No. 2 - see separate report

Continued along good roads and inspected the villages of ARURUHU, DOBHOHO and PEKOI (all V.C.NAHUI) finding them all to be very clean and well looked after, then to

PEKOI & DOBHOHO Company Plantation No.1 - see separate report and to HIRU Village (V.C.NAHUI) to find it as all the other inland Keuru villages i.e. good, to finally return to the Rest House at 1.30 p.m.

During the afternoon completed the purchase of the land at OBAUHU and then held C.P.S. for tax defaulters.

Later proceeded to Huiva for dinner with Mr and Mrs Drummond.

MAIRA arrived at 7 p.m.

Thursday 15th. December 1938.

Held C.N.M. until 11 o'clock when I proceeded to HUIVA and held a Native Labour Inspection, finding everything correct. After a light lunch proceeded on to APAIMINI Plantation but I had forgotten to advise Mrs Friddle of the inspection and on arriving there found all natives to be away - carrying Maira cargo to Peto. Returned to Huiva and later to Rest House, arriving there at dusk.

There are a number of streams on this beach which are getting deeper and bigger and more awkward to cross, one between HUIVA and APAIMINI being the worst. Very shortly this will need either two bridges with a connecting road through part of Huiva Plantation or a ferryman.

Made arrangements to do some work for Mr Drummond tomorrow and on its completion to move on to MEI.

Friday 16th. December 1938.

Four boys sent ahead to cut a narrow track along Mr Zimmer's road on the Bluff to see the state of same.

Mr Drummond arrived at 8.15 a.m. he having a C.P.S. - fowl stealing. Was proceeding with this and had taken his evidence when it was noticed that the defendant look queer, but before the A.C. and the Interpreter could catch hold of him he fell backwards, and there being no rail, fell heavily to the ground nearly five feet below. I gave him treatment for a faint and had him warmly wrapped up in the sun, but as he showed no sign of coming to it was considered to be an epileptic fit, and I proceeded with Mr Drummond's other labour work. A good watch was kept on the native but he did not improve and on trying to administer whisky I found his teeth too tightly clenched to allow the liquid to pass. He seemed to be sinking lower and lower and there being nothing I could do permission was given for him to be taken to the village, a Councillor returning within half an hour to say that the native was dead. (I heard the next day that actually the native did not die - he was taken for dead by the village people and his grave was being prepared when with great emission of blood he suddenly came to life again).

Packed up and with 31 carriers moved to MEI, inspecting en route.

PAKOI & DOBHORO Company Plantation - see separate report

HEREHERE, ARURUHU & HIRU Coy. Plantation - see separate report.

Unfortunately the wind was blowing strongly from the South East and punching into this was so tiring that on arrival at the Bluff I did not have the energy to inspect Mr Zimmer's road (natives were paid for the work done) and I was very exhausted on arrival at MEI at 3.30 p.m.

On arrival forwarded some mail to Kerema.

Rest House bad, Barracks unusable and latrine not fit for pigs. So I decided to move on to UARIFI in the morning and work there, it being thought also from a letter received from Mrs Briddle that Mr G.H. Massey-Baker was in a very low state and help may be needed.

Used 36 carriers this day.

Saturday 17th. December 1938.

Sent A.C. MIMO to Kerema with prisoner, depositions etc..

Packed up and with 35 carriers moved to UARIPI Rest House but firstly burnt the latrine and had the old Barracks pulled down. The poor Rest House now becomes a Barracks and a new Rest House is to be built. Arrived at UARIPI and after settling in visited Mrs Priddle and later Mr and Mrs Massey-Baker. Mr Massey-Baker was conscious and in possession of all his faculties, but was very low and as he was in constant and unrelievable pain, I had to hope for his sake that the end would be quick.

Returned to the Rest House and revised most of the Mei census, and arranging to complete MEI and to do UARIPI and PETOI on the morrow.

Used 35 carriers this day.

Sunday 18th. December 1938.

Worked on census revision until 11 o'clock when I received a note from Mrs Priddle saying that Mr Massey-Baker was very low and that she thought he would shortly pass away. I ceased work and went down to Mrs Baker to offer any assistance and so, Mrs Priddle having gone home for a short rest and lunch, I was alone with Mrs Massey-Baker when he breathed his last. He was not conscious for a couple of hours preceding death.

With Mrs Priddle's help the body was washed and laid out fully dressed.

An advice of the death was sent across to the Resident Magistrate but on hearing that he had gone up River in the morning to the gaol gardens, I decided to cross to Kerema myself as Mrs Massey-Baker said that the deceased had always expressed a desire to be buried at Kerema.

Crossed over to Kerema and reported to the Resident Magistrate, who had returned shortly before, and with him arrangements made for the funeral tomorrow. Returned to Petoi and secured some sawn timber and then had same taken over to Kerema for the coffin.

As Mrs Priddle was going to watch the body all night, I decided I could not leave them alone all night and so spent the night there, mostly awake. Very heavy rain nearly all night.

Monday 19th. December 1938.

Returned to Rest House at dawn to make a wreath, dress and breakfast and to return to Mrs Massey-Baker at 8.30 a.m. Mr Vivian arrived

at 9 a.m. but the tide was high and a wait was necessary before the coffin could be taken down the beach to the waiting canoe. The crossing was made to Kerema where the funeral service was subsequently read by Mr Vivian. Heavy rain shortly after the service and it fell heavily for several hours.

Returning to Petoi Mrs Massey-Baker expressed her appreciation of Mr Vivian's organisation and successful conduction of the whole funeral, which was without a hitch.

Tuesday 20th. December 1938.

Upon the approval of the R.M. it was decided to abandon the present patrol to return in a week or so to complete and so proceeded by whale-boat to Kerema, having firstly spent a long time with Mrs Massey-Baker in the preparation of death notices etc.. Arrived at Kerema at noon and reported to the R.M.

Total number of carriers engaged on this patrol 786 and no native refused and was obliged to carry.

Ann Massey-Baker
A.M.B.

Kerema.

14th. January 1939.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

12 of 38/39

Kerema

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to
MEI and UARIPI villages in Kerema Bay. for the purpose of
Collecting Tax, paying Family Bonus etc.

Left Station on 28/12/38 Returned to Station on 30/12/38
 Number of Carriers employed 23 Number of Police taken 3
 Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Canoes, F.A. Bensted.
 Villages visited MEI and UARIPI.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

S205/2.37.-1.000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 7th January, 1939*Raminan*

Officer in charge of Station

N.B. It is being left to the natives to meet their 1938/39 tax - due on the 1st July last - either now or in March next. If they will not accept the present opportunity and then complain that when the tax for 1939/40 is demanded in October next there have been two taxes in one year, the complaint will be without substance. Procrastination is not only the thief of time but the toy of Papua

Rav
 R.M.G.D.
 7/1/39.

Report of a Patrol to MBI and UARIPI villages in Kerema Bay for the purpose of collecting Tax etc.

Wednesday 28th. December 1938.

At 9 a.m. I received instructions from the R.M. to proceed to the villages of MBI and UARIPI in Kerema Bay to collect Taxes there.

C. I. KIVAVIA and A. Cs. MANAI, TURLAI and ABAIA were to accompany so I called for them at once and commenced to pack all the necessary gear.

At 11 a.m. we left the Station and using the KARAIKA Ferryman's canoe and 4 prisoners as paddlers we crossed over the Bay to Patoi Point.

Here the gear was unloaded and placed on the beach. The Ferryman was instructed to take the four prisoners back to Kerema.

From here the gear was taken round to UARIPI village by the V.C. of MBI village, who happened to be passing at the time with a large canoe.

Whilst the gear was being carried up to the Rest House by the six carriers of UARIPI, I left and paid a visit to MBI village, (V.C. MARARE).

The village was found to be in a clean condition and the new Rest House ordered built by Mr AER.M. Rutledge was well on its way to completion.

The people of MBI were informed that I wanted them all to come to UARIPI on the Thursday to enable me to do the Tax work for them there as I was unable to occupy the Rest House at MBI.

By 3 p.m. I was back in UARIPI (V.C. MAI'E) and at once started to revise the Census and continued at this until almost 7 p.m.

Darkness was just falling as I viewed the last of the "new babies" added its name to those already on the Census.

Thursday 29th. December, 1938.

Work was started at 7 a.m. and I first of all attended to the payments of the Family Bonus to the UARIPI women and then collected taxes from the UARIPI taxable natives. Three natives of UARIPI who were unable to produce their tax for 37/38 were sent in to Kerema in the care of A.C. ABAIA to be charged.

Those natives who were unable to pay their tax for the year 38/39 were told that they had four months in which to find the money, after which period they would be charged if they had not paid up.

By noon all the Tax for UARIPI was completed and I at once started on the revision of the Census for MBI village.

I worked at this until 5 p.m. and then viewed all the new babies after which I started on the payment of the Bonus.

By the time I had paid half the Bonus for MEI village it had become too dark to see so all work was stopped for the day.

Soon after I had ceased work the V.C. MAI'E of UARIPI reported. He had been away at his garden and had only just heard of my arrival in the village to collect Tax.

Friday 30th. December, 1938.

Started work at 7 a.m. and finished off the payment of the Bonus before breakfast.

The collection of the Tax was then started and this was completed by 1 p.m. Only two or three natives were able to pay their Tax for the year 1938/39 and the rest were warned that it must be paid within four months or action would be taken.

A total of sixteen natives from MEI and UARIPI failed to pay for the year 1937/38. All of these natives were absent from their villages, having gone along to Orokolo to a dance.

An inspection of the UARIPI village was carried out and it was found that the place was in good condition and clean.

Eight carriers were obtained and all the gear carried down to the creek at the rear of the village and loaded on to a canoe.

Five paddlers were used to take the canoe over to Kerema, where we arrived at 4.15 p.m.

All gear was unloaded and carried up to the Station after which the canoe and carriers were paid off and allowed to return to their villages. A list of the natives who had not paid 1937/8 Tax was made out so that an A.S. could leave for OROKOLO to arrest them and bring them in.

F.A. Benstead. P.O.

On this Patrol no carriers refused and were compelled to carry.

PATROL REPORT

Station Number.

13 of 38/39.

Kerema

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, I.O. to

the CPAO Villages for the purpose of

carrying out General Tax Work and also to do the complete revision of the
Census for those villages.

Left Station on 17/1/39

Returned to Station on 21/1/39

Number of Carriers employed 74

Number of Police taken 11

Name of vessel used and of Officer in Charge Whaler and canoes: F.A. Bensted.

Villages visited NAMAHEROI. BIRAKERA. HEVAIVIRI. IRAUAPAIRI. HAMIHUHU.

HAUPOIA. ABUIPI. KAPIRI.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 27th Jan'y, 1939

Samson
Officer in charge of Station

Vcd. G.S letter 427/772/39 of 16. 12.2.39
& this Office 126/35/39 " " 6.3.39
re Native Pletter (Page 3 of Report)

Wu
A/R

126/ 35/39

Hon. G.S.

Patrol Report No. 13 of 38/39 - -- Native Plantations.

I am in receipt of your letter No. 427/772/39 of the 17th ultimo and beg to inform you that there now exists a careful record of native Plantations in this Office.

The P.O. in his report quoted above advised that;-' ...they (BRAU) had been told to clear the ground some ten years ago ...'. Apparently no officer had seen that this instruction was carried out, I can give no reason for this.

To guard against such happenings in the future, Patrol Officers have been instructed to make careful entries in each V.O'S book of the sites of the various village Pits, under the H. Regus and to also note any instructions they might give re them.

W.H.H. Thompson.

A/R.M.G.D. Kerema.

6.3.39

*Notes: G.S. Toogood P.O. 6-3-39
Y.A. Bonstedt P.O. 12.3.39*

P.O. Bonstedt

Please note

ntun.

W.H.H.
A/R.A
6/3/39

d.
i
dy
d

EC. **MINUTE PAPER**

[G.P. 3

No. 427/772/39.

R.M.G.D., Kerema.

Patrol Report No.13 of 38/39 .. Native Plantations.

With reference to the third page of this Report -
Friday 20th January, 1939 - I am directed to ask if there is
any record kept at Kerema of native plantations and how it has
come about that these were forgotten?

L.B. Smith
for G.S.
17.2.1939.



*Via letter
126/39 of 16
6.3.39 (Sent to
P.O. Bank in (2)
P.O. (copy of sum)
w/ 1/2/39
6.3.39*

at
by
of

Report of a Patrol made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to the OPAO villages for the purpose of carrying out General Tax work and also to do the Complete Revision of the Census for these Villages.

Tuesday 17th. January, 1939.

In company with A.Cs. MIRO, BERI and ABATA and O.I. KIVAVIA I left the Station at 9 a.m. to proceed to OPAO.

A large station canoe with 10 prisoners as crew and in the charge of Corporal GIGORI was used to transport the party and all necessary gear to the OPAO landing.

The landing was reached by 11.30 a.m. and all the gear was at once unloaded and the canoe sent back to Kerema.

As V.C. BORIARI of OPAO had assembled a number of carriers at the landing, no time was lost in selecting 16 of their number and getting the gear carried up to the Rest House.

The track from the Landing to the village was found to be in a generally bad state and I at once issued orders that it was to be put in order.

As the V.C. accompanied me from the landing I was able to point out to him the sections which needed attention.

On arriving at the Rest House I called for all the village Councillors to assemble so that I could commence calling the Census without delay. The whole of the afternoon until 6.15 p.m. was spent in calling and revising the Census with the aid of the V.C. Councillors and numerous men of the different villages.

Before I retired for the night I ordered that all the women with new born babies were to be assembled before the Rest House at 6 a.m. the following morning and that the Family Bonus recipients were also to be ready as soon as I had finished adding the new babies to the Census.

Wednesday 18th. January, 1939.

At 6 a.m. a start was made, taking the new babies first and adding their names to the census.

As soon as these were completed and checked I called for all the "money women and men" and then paid the Family Bonus.

This work took me through until 11 a.m. when a pause was made for lunch. At noon I commenced collecting the Tax and managed to complete all of the collection by 7 p.m.

The response was very good indeed and not one native was unable to pay his taxes up to date.

KIVAVIA who had been talking with the village people during the night informed me that there were three natives of a taxable age in HEVAIVIRI village whose names were not on the census and who also had never paid a tax. In IRAUPAIRI there were two boys and HAUPOIA one native who had always managed to evade the tax collector and also kept their names from being added to the census.

I at once called for these natives and after a little delay they appeared and offered varying excuses as to why they had never appeared at Tax time in the previous years.

I discovered that these natives were in the habit of hiding in the bush whenever an officer visited OPAO.

None of these byyhad ever gone to work and strangely enough not one was married. The V.C. and Councillors had aided these natives in concealing themselves as they had never previously revealed their names at the annual revision of the Census.

I am afraid that I talked rather strongly to the V.C. and Councillors in regard to this matter and I noted that afterwards they were more wide awake and eager to volunteer information.

Orders were given that on the morrow all the village people were to remain in their proper villages and were not to go into the bush or visit the villages of friends.

Thursday 19th. January, 1939.

A very early start was made and the first village visited was HEVAIVIRI. A long length of cane was tied from one side of the village "street" to the other in the form of a barrier.

The A.Cs. and myself then went from house to house and made certain that all the people were assembled on one side of the barrier.

A man's name was then called and he was asked to produce his wife or wives and then the women were asked to call their children in their order of age. They were then checked off on the new census sheets and sent to the other side of the barrier and told to sit down and not move about. Any of the children who happened to be married were called upon to produce their wives and children (if any) and then allowed to join the others on the other side of the barrier.

In this way every person in the village was viewed, and incidently put in his or her right place on the census sheets.

Four Carriers were used to carry my table, chair and box from village to village.

By 4.p.m. the only village left to see was that of ABUIPI a new village just added to the census. As there are only 69 people living in this village I managed to complete it by 5 p.m.

ABUIPI is rather a well laid out village of 14 houses and at the time of my visit was very clean and tidy, indeed.

On arriving back at the Rest House a number of minor disputes were heard and then I retired to bed.

Friday 20th. January. 1933.

During the early morning C.N.C. was held and then a number of disputes settled out of court. A visit was paid to the sites of the OPAO "Company" Plantations and these I found to be greatly over-grown.

Two of these Plantations are situated near to BIRAKERA village and at present are overgrown by heavy scrub. In one Plantation I could only find 18 trees and in the other 22 trees. The rest of the trees had died, being strangled by the scrub. The lining and spacing was bad and on asking the people about the plantations I was informed that they had been told to clear the ground some ten years ago. This they had done but as no officer had come up to line and space the areas they had done so themselves and then forgotten all about them and allowed the scrub to grow up.

I ordered that these areas be cleared immediately and kept so to enable the next visiting officer to line and space the areas ready for planting. The only other plantation was found to be in an even worse state as there were no coconuts growing in it at all.

The same orders were given in regard to this area which is situated close to the OPAO Landing.

Just before noon 16 carriers were selected and all the gear carried to the old village of PURARI. Here the carriers were paid off and the gear loaded on to four canoes belonging to and manned by 8 natives from KAPIRI.

On arriving at KAPIRI all my gear was placed in a new house in the village and work was commenced at once.

I carried on until it got dark to work when I found that I had only the revision of the KAPIRI village left to do.

At 6.30 the Corporal GIGORI and 7 A.Cs. arrived from Kerema via OPAO.

A minute from the R.M.G.D. was received in which I was requested to purchase as many coconuts as possible for the Kerema Prison. The Whaler which the Corporal had brought up to OPAC landing was to be used to carry them back to Kerema.

Two A.Cs. were at once despatched back to OPAC to tell the people that I wished to purchase coconuts on the morrow and also to look after the whaler at the landing until my arrival. The two A.Cs. were given enough food to last them until my arrival and also a fly to spread over the whaler so that they would be protected from any possible rain.

All of the A.Cs were sent to sleep in the Dabu as there is no Rest House or Barracks in KAPIRI.

Saturday 21st. January, 1939.

At 5.45 a.m all the village people were called up and the revision of the census carried out.

As soon as this was completed I purchased 192 coconuts and hired a large canoe and four carriers to carry them and some of my gear to Kerema under the charge of A.C. WARABU.

As soon as the canoe was despatched I selected four smaller canoes and 8 carriers to take myself and my gear to OPAC, together of course with the A.Cs.

On arriving at OPAC I found the Rest House enclosure heaped high with coconuts and I at once set to work and purchased over five hundred. I could have got triple this number but I had to stop as I feared the whaler would be overloaded on the trip in to Kerema if I bought any more. At 1 p.m. I had all the coconuts in the whaler at the landing and then embarked with all the Police and the eight prisoners I was bringing in to Kerema. Of these prisoners seven were tax Defaulters and one a native who had cut down a large Samoan Breadfruit tree.

A quick trip was made down the river with the out going tide and we arrived at Kerema at 3.45 p.m.

F.A. Bensted
P.O.

On this Patrol no carriers refused and were compelled to carry.

<u>Articles</u>	Quantity taken on Patrol.	Police	Carriers	Others	Total Used	Cost	Retnd.
Rice	100 lbs.	55		15	70	8/2	30
Tobacco	5 lbs.		2	2	4	10/2	1
Kerosene	$\frac{1}{2}$ gal.	$\frac{1}{2}$			$\frac{1}{2}$	/5	

Total £ -18/9

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

14 of 1938/9

K E R E M A STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by G. W. Toogood. P. O. to

TIVARI POLICE CAMP for the purpose of

Changing over the Police at BULLDOG Camp and Out-Camps, and
carrying out Native Labour Inspections at Mining Camps.

Left Station on 23rd January, 1939 Returned to Station on 9th February, 1939.

Number of Carriers employed 233 Number of Police taken 4

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Launch ZONSEA. O. Higginson.

Villages visited SIILO, UAWAI, KARANA, KOARU, LELEFINU, HAHU HAHU, TAVAFURU,
KUPIPI, HEAVALA, HEATOARE and SAVAIVIRI.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8935/10.38.—1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date ~~24~~ 24.2, 1939

W.H.K. Thompson.

Officer in charge of Station

REPORT OF PATROL

to

TIVERI POLICE CAMP

OFFICER: G. W. Teesood. P.O.

ON: 23rd January, 1939.

Acting under the instructions of the P.M. G.D., I left Kerema Station on the morning of Monday, the 23rd January, 1939, accompanied by A.C's. MANAI, OREIA, KURUWIA and WARABU, Interpreter MIRIA, 42 Prisoners in charge of Warder HARIHA, and nine village natives as Carriers, and proceeded over the Cupola to SILO, where food was bought from the village people, the Prisoners fed, and sent back to Kerema. A cursory inspection was made of the village, and natives were engaged to carry to UAMAI, where the night was spent. All villages to Uamai were clean and in good order.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 58.

Tuesday, 24th January.

Engaged Carriers at Uamai, and proceeded, at 8.0 a.m., on along the coast to KOARU, making cursory inspections of all villages on route, all being in from fair to good order. Held C.N.M. at Koaru, and dismissed a case of assault. Night was spent at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 50.

Wednesday, 25th January.

Left Koaru at 8.30 a.m., after engaging fresh carriers, and proceeded on to KUKIPI, visiting the villages of LELEFIRU, HABUPABU and TAVAFURU, all of which were in much the same condition as when I visited them on my last Patrol a month ago, and very little work had been done towards building the new villages. Fixed up various little office matters, and spent the night at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 34.

Thursday, 26th January.

After loading the Launch with the Tiveri Police Camp cargo, I left Kukipi at 6.0 a.m., by the launch for Tiveri, in company with Mr. O. Higginson, in charge of the launch, four A.C's., Interpreter, two Prisoners and Personal attendant. The night was spent on the river.

Number of Carriers employed all day = -

Friday, 17th January.

Proceeded on up river to OLIPAI, where the Police Stations owing to the mining camps at 'Sunset' and 'Mosquito Creek' were unloaded and left in the respective stores. A.C. WARABU was then dispatched to Sunset with a letter, informing the manager of Tivori Gold Dredging Co., of my intended inspection there in a few days time. The night was spent at Olipai Landing.

Saturday, 28th January.

Continued on up the river to BULLDOG, arriving there at about 11.0 a.m., all gear and the remainder of the cargo was unloaded and carried in to the Police Camp, the Launch returning down the river. The Camp was found to be in excellent order, two of the Buildings having been completely re-built and the other two re-roofed. The whole of the Camp area was clear of grass and all under cultivation, much fresh ground having been planted up with Sugar-cane, Sweet Potato, Beans and Pineapples, a plentiful supply of the first two items is already being obtained and the Beans should be producing in a week or so. The Aerodrome was also in first class condition, being in much the same order as I left it three months before. A.C. DOMANASI reported that all had been well at the Camp, except that the Noviaivi Village Natives, who were engaged to build the new houses, had been playing up a great deal, only working when they felt inclined, with the result that although they had been up there for over two months they had only built two houses instead of three, as was at first directed, these natives were also instructed that they were to have finished the job inside of a month. The result is that the Police Camp has been left short of Rice, owing to the extra amount eaten by the Village Natives. In view of the report, and as the job was a contract one, the natives will be paid only the contract price, less their food for the last two weeks when they did no work, but made themselves a canoe. The A.C. reported that the Prisoners had worked very well, cleaning the Aerodrome and attending to the garden. Also that he had been there on his own all the time, A.C. UDAMA having remained at NEPA, so that he was unable to convey a message to Kerema about the natives not working. He has done remarkably good work never-the-less during his stay at the Camp.

A general inspection was made of the camp and an inventory taken of all tools, implements, furniture, etc. Stores were checked, and the Police rations owing to Mr. H. R. Garbutt of NEPA were sorted out and cased. The Store key was then given to A.C. HANAI, and he was informed that he would from then on be in charge of the Camp and equipment, and that A.C. KURUWIA would remain to assist him keep the Camp clean, but was to be changed over with one of the other A.C.'s. from the mining camps each month.

The night was spent at the Police Camp.

Sunday, 29th January.

Proceeded to NEPA for an inspection of the labour at the mining camp of Mr. H. R. Garbutt, in company with A.C. OREIA and Interpreter MIRIA, with 5 prisoners carrying the Police rations and my gear. Inspected Camp and dispatched A.C. UDAMA, with three of the prisoners, back to Bulldog, he was instructed to assist A.C. DOMAMASI with the building of a raft. Spent the night at Nepa.

Monday, 30th January.

Held an inspection of the labour, then returned to Bulldog, with A.C. KADA and Int. MIRIA, leaving A.C. OREIA as the camp guard. Arriving at the Police Camp, all the gear was sorted out and A.C. UDAMA was put in charge of the items to be loaded onto the Launch when it returned, the rest of the gear being loaded onto the rafts, which were just about finished. Leaving A.C. UDAMA and 3 prisoners to follow in the launch, I left per rafts with A.C.'s. DOMAMASI & KADA, Int. MIRIA and two prisoners, and proceeded down the river to OLIPAI, arriving at about 9.0 p.m. The night being spent at the Landing.

Tuesday, 31st January.

Leaving A.C. KADA and my personal attendant at OLIPAI, the rest of us proceeded in to Sunset, where a Native Labour Inspection was held. Leaving there in the late afternoon, we proceeded on to Mosquito Creek, and the night was spent at the Mining Camp of Mr. A. H. Bethune.

Wednesday, 1st February.

After holding an inspection of the labour at this camp, I returned to Olipai. Arriving there about 1.0 p.m. I found the launch was running late and had not yet arrived up, it arrived

however a couple of hours later. The night was spent at the Landing.

Thursday, 2nd January.

After instructing the Police and prisoners to remain at Olipai until the return of the Launch from Bulldog, I proceeded up in the Launch, rather than wait for it to return, and saw that all the gear was loaded aboard alright. After picking up the gear and A.C. UDANA and the other three prisoners, the launch returned to Olipai at about 1.30 p.m. and picked up the other Police and prisoners, then continued on down until darkness. The night being spent on the river bank.

Friday, 3rd January.

Continued on down the river to KUKUPI, arriving there at about 12.30 p.m. Spent the remainder of the day sorting out gear, papers, etc., and attending to village disputes. The night was spent at the Rest House.

Saturday, 4th January.

Left Kukipi at 7.0 a.m. and proceeded up to MOVIAMI by Canoe. Inspected Villages, made payments to natives and settled village disputes.

HEAVALA. V.C. KIRORI.

Village in fairly clean order, as clean as could be expected in view of the particularly high flood tides, which have been flooding the village. Rest House and Barracks in good, sound condition, the latter having been re-built, and only just completed. Six natives given six months to re-build their houses.

HEATOARE. V.C. JACK.

Village also suffering the effects of the high tides, but was found to be very clean and tidy.

For some unknown reason these two villages always have about three times as many disputes to be settled, as any other village in the Division. It is quite usual to have to settle between twenty and thirty disputes on a single visit.

SAVAIVIRI. V.C. KEAU.

This village is in contrast to the last two, in as much as there is rarely any Court work, and hardly ever a dispute to be settled. The village was clean and tidy and looking as pretty as ever. The people were informed that they had won the prize

for the 'Best kept Plantation' for the year 1938/39, in respect to the No.4/5 Plantation.

Returned to KUKIPI late that night and spent the night at the Rest House.

Total no. of Carriers employed all day = 12.

Sunday, 5th February.

Remained at KUKIPI settling disputes from villages west.

Monday, 6th February.

Held C.M.M. at KUKIPI, then left, and proceeded along the coast to LELEFIRU, inspecting villages en route. All villages in as presentable a condition as could be expected. Held C.M.M. at LELEFIRU, and settled several disputes. Spent the night at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 18

Tuesday, 7th February.

Left Lelefiru and continued on along the coast to KARAMA. Inspected villages en route, all in clean order and condition. Called on Mr. F. W. Clark at KOARU and held C.M.M., dealing with a case of assault between two of the Plantation Labourers. Spent the night at the KARAMA Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 21

Wednesday, 8th February.

Continued on along the coast to SILO, again inspecting all villages, which were found to be clean, tidy and in good order. Investigated the reason for the decrease in the number of trees in the Company Plantations along this section of the coast, and found that a good 90% of the decrease has been caused through tide erosion washing the trees away. A separate report has been rendered on this matter. Held C.M.M. at SILO. Night was spent at the Rest House.

T

Number of Carriers employed all day = 20

Thursday, 9th February.

Left SILO and proceeded on to KIREMA Station, arriving there at about 11.30 a.m.

Number of Carriers employed all day = 20

TOTAL: = 253

E. J. Good

P. O. 20. 2. 39.

Article	Quantity taken on Patrol	QUANTITIES ISSUED AND VALUE					Returned	remarks
		Police	Carriers	Others	Total Used	Government Cost		
Rice ...								
Biscuits ...								
Meat ...								
Sugar ...								
Tea ...								
Soap ...								
Tobacco ...	1bs. 17		1bs. 16	1bs. 1		2 3	3	
Matches ...								
Kerosene...								
Tents ...								
Flies ...								
Lamps ...								
Buckets ...								
Kerosene Cans ...								
Knives and Sheaths								
Knives, 18 in. ...								
Knives, others ...								
Belts ...								
Pouches ...								
Print ...								
Twill ...								
Handkerchiefs ...								
Boards ...								
Mirrors ...								
Axes ...								
Half Axes								
Tomahawks								
					Total £	2	3	5

NOTE.—When an article such as a tent is issued, but is returned for future use, the value should not be entered.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER
15 of '38/39

~~Kerema~~ **KEREMA** STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by **.H.H. THOMPSON A.R.M.** to
Kerema from Kairuku for the purpose of
reaching station from le ve.

Left ~~Station~~ **Kairuku** **7.2.39** Returned to ~~Station~~ **Station** on **11.2.39**

Number of Carriers employed **44 incl. 30 prs** Number of Police taken **4**

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge

Villages visited **All coast 1 villages between the two stations.**

- (1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.
- (2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.
- (3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.
- (4) The space below is not to be written in.
- (5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

S336/10.38.-1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date **14.2.39**, 19

W.H.C. Thompson.

Officer in charge of Station

Vide G S letter 634/772/39 of the 28/3/39 & this office 183/35/39 of the 18/4/39 in answer to Native letter.

REPORT of a PATROL by W.H.H. THOMPSON A.R.M.
from KAIRUKU to KEREMA for the purpose of reaching
new station from leave .

Tuesday 7.2.39. Left Kairuku station in whaleboat with Lce/Cpl SARIKI, 3 A.C's and 30 prisoners. At PINUPAKA picked up 16 more carriers, who volunteered their services from WAIMA. As a matter of fact about 40 had arrived to meet me with their V.C's. Reached KIVORI 6 p.m. ^{Visited} Father Lang at WAIMA and Father Riegler at TOU OVIA Mission stations en route.

Wed. 8.2.39. 26 prisoners from Kerema gaol met me just before I was starting off, sent 26 Kairuku prisoners back with Lce/Cpl SARIKI and 2 A.C'S and retained 1 Kairuku A.C and 4 Kairuku prisoners. KIVORI men were glad of the tobacco to make up the extra carriers required. Rounded Cape Possession by a track recently constructed by the APONAIPI Oil Company/ This was very muddy, the tenacious black variety, making progress rather slow. As the Hon O.S rang me up on the matter, whilst I was in Port Moresby, have thought it wise to forward a letter to Hon. G.S on the matter of this road. The Company are scout boring in the vicinity of the Cape. Arriving at ~~the~~ OIAPU (LOVE) village, Mr. L. Owen, the Manager very kindly put me up for the night. It took me between 4 and 5 hours to complete the walk to-day. There is an alternative track around the beach all the way, but this can only be attempted in places at low tide and the time this would happen was not convenient.

Thursday 9.2.39. To LESE, via IOKEA. Called in at the L.M.S Station at latter place. Reached LESE 5 p.m, after a walk of about 20 miles.

Friday 10.2.39. To KOARU, a distance of about 24 miles. I proceeded by canoe from MOTU MOTU to LILFINU and got in 6 p.m. It is over 10 year since I was in this Division and I could hardly recognise the coast line owing to the encroachments of the sea in the meantime. It is most regrettable that an enormous number of coconuts have been swept away. It would not appear that the x inroads of the sea have ceased. Dr. Woolnough, I think in 1927 or '28, warned us that they would not.

Sat. 11.2.39. Left KOARU 7 A.M and did the 24 miles to Kerema by 3.30 p.m. Again the erosion of the tides were visible all along this stretch of coast. WAMAI have suffered very severely and also SILO. I am afraid there is little we can do to help, if anything. A suggestion of Mr Clark of KOARU to me was that we cut down every third row of coconuts on the coastal fringe, their roots would perhaps form a barrier, but this idea to my mind is not practicable. Reason with the natives and get them to shift inland and plant more coconuts there seems to be the only sound policy. Mr P.O Bensted reported all well at Kerema Station. Mr R.M. Vivian had already proceeded on leave.

W.H.K. Thompson

A.R.M.

14.2.39

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

16 of '38/3

K E R E A G.D. STATION

.H.H. THOMPSON A/R.M.

REPORT OF A PATROL made by _____ to
OROKOLO(1) General inspection villages (2) Holding Court where
necessary.Left Station on 16.3.39 Returned to Station on 21.3.39
Number of Carriers employed 18 (12 pfs) Number of Police taken 4Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge
Villages visited PETOI, UA LEPI? M? - I, KFUJU, KOIA ARU? KEA-KEA, VAILALA,
OROKOLOX UMO.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

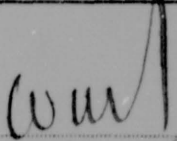
(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8936/10.38.-1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 24.3.39, 19


Officer in charge of Station

REPORT OF Patrol to OROKOLO
for the purpose of general inspection villages
and the holding of Courts where necessary.

By W.H.H. THOMPSON. A/R.H.C.D.

Thursday 16.3.39 Left Station 7 A.M. in whaleboat with Sergeant MARIKOPA, 3 A.C.'s and 12 prisoners to act as carriers, 1 A.C. and 4 prisoners also came to take the boat back, when we disembarked at PUTOI. Visited Mrs Hecay-Baker and Mrs Bridle, who occupy adjacent trading sites near the village. Thence past the Bluff to HUIVA Pt'n, where I met Mrs Drummond, her husband was away in Port Moresby. It is **very** necessary to approach any of these ladies' homes with caution, they all keep dogs as a protection against burglars, who are the reverse of docile, of course a very necessary precaution. Thence to KEURU.

Friday 17.3.39. To VAILALA East. Met. Mr. A. Williams, Pt'n. Inspector for the Steamships Trading Co. Ltd, who was on the "MAIWA" anchored off the village. He complained of thefts from VAIVIRI Pt'n. of copra. Police investigating the matter. He had no clues to offer, copra had vanished in quantity ~~xxx~~ from his bulk store. Village clean and an excellent Rest House. I could not recognise the mouth of the river, since I was last here about 21 years ago, there had occurred an encroachment of the sea, which had completely covered the old site of VAILALA West village.

Sat. 18.3.39. To OROKOLO. There I met P.O. Bensted, engaged on the laborious and wearisome work of revising the Census. He was making good progress and hopes to have complete the West end of the Division in about a months time, he had been away since the 4th inst. from the station. Held C.P.S. Police proceeded against 6 natives for stealing copra, property of the OROKOLO Industries, Messrs Burke and Coghill trading under that name. One native convicted and sent to gaol for four months. He had stolen two bags of copra, tried to sell it at HUIVA and in Kerema Bay. The bags were found by the police with Mr Burke's name. A number of Tax Defaulters were also proceeded against by the P.O. As I was proceeding along the beach to-day I encountered a native in a disreputable singlet and when asked what right had he to wear this garment, he proudly exclaimed: - "I seven days". Which being interpreted meant that he was a Mission Teacher of the Seventh Day Adventists Mission.

Sunday 19.3.39 A meeting of OROKOLO and ANIHAVA councillors was held. I inquired why they did not induce their people to sell copra, they replied that at the present price, no one wanted to. From the European traders I found that they are only able to give about 5/- for a full bag of copra, freight of about £3 a ton from this place to Port Moresby at the present depressed level of copra prices, does not allow them a profit of more than 1/- a bag, even at that low figure. A native will of course tell you that the traders only give him 1/- or 2/- a bag, that is ~~quite~~ ^{quite} true, but the bags they are talking about probably weigh but 50 or so lbs. The whole trouble with the policy of making the native plant coconuts in these parts is that there is such a poor market for the commodity. These OROKOLO and ANIHAVA natives are making next to no copra. What can be done about it is beyond me. They are being made to plant new areas, but do so very unwillingly and also seem to prefer going to gaol for non-payment of tax, rather than making copra. Councillors had no complaints or suggestions to make to me. Warned all V.C.'s that this stealing of copra from Europeans must cease. I am not very hopeful of the police being able to find the VAIVIRI Pt'n. copra thieves. The P.O. is working on this business.

Monday 20.3.39 P.O. went to the small village of HELAKELA yesterday and to-day I returned to KEURU, rather along trek from OROKOLO, but I made the Rest House there by 4 p.m.

Tuesday 21.3.39. Returned to the station after a ~~rather~~ ^{quite} exciting race with the tide around the Bluff. It is a great pity that Mr. Zimmer's strenuous efforts, whilst R.M. here, to put a road round this promontory, were not met with the success they deserved. To blast a road round would mean a large sum spent in explosives. Mr P.O. Teogood reports all well, when I got back at 12.30 p.m.

W.H.H.
/R.M.C.D.

23.3.39

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

17 of 38/39

KEREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to
the Western Boundary of the Gulf Division for the purpose of
visiting all villages to revise the Census and also to collect any
outstanding taxes for the year 1938/39 and to carry out a General Inspt

Left Station on 4/3/39 Returned to Station on 5/4/39

Number of Carriers employed 436 Number of Police taken 5

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge Station Whaler: F.A. Bensted, P.O.

Villages visited ERE. KIROVI. HEPERE. HARIRAO. MATTAALAE. ARIHAMA. NOMI. HARIVAVU.
MAREA. KAIBUKABU. NORIHAIHU. IOKU. HARIRAREVA? HOPAIKU. HURURU. KAVAVA. PARIPOKI
LOIPEA. NORIAU. HERAKERA. HONORO. PAKOWAU. MIRIKAI I. BIAI. HAI'ALI. AUMA.
ARUAPE No. 2. ARUAPE No. 1. AREHUKIRAPI. KUKIPI. HILOI. VAILALA W. VAILALA E.
AIVAU. KOLALAU. KAROKARO. HARORO. POIVA. HELLAU. DUE. ICRI. LEPOKERA. APURARIA.
OPA. BELEPA. EPEBEAMO. KEAKEA. HEREHETE. OBARUKU. OVAVA. LAKOMA. PEKOI. HIRU.
ARUNUHU. DODEHONO. PARIHAIHA. MEI. UARIP I.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8336/10.38.—1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 24 4, 19 39

W.H.H. Shapson
 Officer in charge of Station

Report of a Patrol to the Western Boundary of the Gulf Division for the purpose of visiting all villages to revise the Census and also to collect any outstanding Taxes for the year 1938/39 and to carry out a general inspection etc.

Saturday 4th. March. 1939.

Acting on instructions received from the A/R.M., G.D. I left the Station at 8.30 a.m. in the Station Whaler to proceed to MEI village where I was to pick up carriers to take my gear through to KEURU.

The crew of the whaler consisted of A.C.KADA and six prisoners whilst A.Cs. TURIAI, BERI, IRIRI and BOBI and L/C. SAGOI and C.I. KIVAVIA were to accompany me on Patrol.

On Reaching MEI (V.C.MARARE) I found that the V.C. and Councillors had 28 carriers waiting for me so no time was lost in getting the gear unloaded and tied up in loads.

A.C.KADA was then sent back to Kerama with the whaler whilst I started a long the beach for the Bluff.

By 2 p.m. we reached HUIVA Plantation and I made a call on Mr and Mrs A.D.Drummond.

At 4 p.m. we reached the KEURU Rest House where V.Cs. KAHAMO and NAHUI reported and were told to have 28 carriers ready for me at 6 am. on the following morning. The Rest House and Barracks were found to be in excellent condition and I am of the opinion that this Rest House is now the best west of Kerama.

This day 34 carriers were used.

Sunday 5th. March.

At 7 a.m. we left the Rest House and proceeded to KEURU Creek where I warned the Ferryman that he was to have a new canoe ready within two weeks as the existing one was almost a wreck.

It took over an hour to get all the gear across on the one small leak canoe and by that time I had completely lost all of my usual gear.

I paid a visit to KEAKRA V.C. HEVO and found the village and Barracks to be all in good order. AO
able

By 12.30 p.m. we reached Vailala East village (V.C.I) started
Keuru carriers were paid off and allowed to return to

Councillors strolled up to the Rest House and casually mentioned that a woman had had her arm torn off by a crocodile the day before and that she was now lying in one of the village houses.

I took my medicine box and went to the village and found the woman in the care of her husband. The people had tied a ligature just above the wound and so had stopped most of the bleeding. The arm had been torn off at the elbow joint, which was exposed, and the flesh on the upper arm had also been torn off in such a manner as to expose about three inches of the bone above the joint. There was little I could do except to dress the wound. This I did and then sent a note off to Mr Nolan of the S.D.A. Mission at Orokolo to ask him if he could let me have surgical needles and thread and also surgical knives so that I could tie the end of the arteries and large veins and trim up the stump of the arm before I made arrangements to send the woman in to Port Moresby to have the arm amputated.

At 8.30 p.m. Mr and Mrs Nolan arrived and we at once improvised an operating table out of my Patrol Tables. A general anaesthetic was given and the arm, or rather what was left of it was operated upon.

Mr and Mrs Nolan left at Midnight for the return trip to Orokolo.

Whilst I was waiting for word from Orokolo the natives told me that the crocodile which had taken the woman's arm was basking on the mud bank in the middle of the River and asked me if I would shoot it. I took a rifle and found that at a range of about 80 yards the croc. made a perfect target. One other crocodile was shot during the afternoon.

It is a pity that nothing can be done about the menace of these crocodiles at Vailala East as the river is literally alive with them.

On this day 28 carriers were used.

Monday 6th. March.

I decided that I would stop in Vailala East village for the day to allow me to attend to the dressing of the wound of the crocodile victim and also to do Census work in the village.

The same system was used in Vailala as I had previously used in the OPAO villages. As before the system of "goat yards" worked well and I was able to locate all people in the village by 3 p.m.

The only difficulty with taking the census is that once you have started you must not stop until every person has been accounted for.

If you pause for morning tea or lunch the people become restless at the delay and begin to move about and great difficulty is experienced in preventing them from wandering into the wrong enclosure before their names have been encribed on the census sheets.

During the late afternoon arrangements were made for the sick woman to be carried in to Kerema in the charge of A.C. BOBI so that she could be sent in to the Native Hospital in Port Moresby by the "Chinsurah".

Tuesday 7th. March.

At 6 a.m. A.C. BOBI and the sick woman were sent away to go in to Kerema whilst I, with 28 carriers left for ANEHAVA.

The crossing of the Vailala River was made without any delay as I used the ferry canoes from both Vailala East and Vailala West.

As the tide was high I did not reach Orokolo until noon when I paid a call on Mr Burke at Kavava.

At 1 p.m. I met Mr DeVerteuil of the A.P.C. on his way along the beach from MURO to Vaiviri Plantation. I had a short talk with him about the 27 deserters from one of the A.P.C. field parties, who had turned up at Kerema some time before.

At 3 p.m. we arrived at ARUJAYA (V.C. URAMARE) and made camp in the Rest House for the night.

I inspected the villages and found them all to be clean and in good repair. Returned to the Rest House at 6 p.m.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Wednesday 8th. March.

At 7 a.m. I left for MURO and after two hours walk arrived at the Rest House to find it occupied by Mr Ferguson of the A.P.C. Co.

I was going on to the village to see if I could find an unoccupied house there but Mr Ferguson insisted that I share the Rest House with him.

Mr and Mrs Nolan of the S.D.A. Mission were also at MURO doing medical work in the villages.

Soon after my arrival V.Cs. IRA of ERE, MBARO of MAIVA and OURA of ANAHU villages in the MURO District reported to me.

The Rest of the day was spent in inspecting villages, company plantations etc. and in settling disputes.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Thursday 9th. March.

to carry out a general inspection.

Mr Nolan accompanied me to carry out medical work in that village.

I was rather glad that he did for I have never visited a village in which there were so many people with sores.

Whilst I was there I saw 38 injections for yaws given and Mr Nolan told me later that he had given more after I left.

The village and all pertaining to it was in good order and repair.

During the afternoon I visited the villages of KARIRAHO, MAIRA, and ABANE (V.C. CURA). and found them all to be in good condition with the exception of ABANE which was rather dirty and overgrown with grass and weeds. The village people were ordered to clean the place up whilst I was there. This they did.

I arrived back at the Rest House at 6 p.m. rather tired after a long day away on the inspections.

This day 4 carriers were used.

Friday 10th. March.

At 7 a.m. I sent all my gear ahead to AREHAVA whilst I accompanied Mr Ferguson to the gas blow near to the Arehava-Muro track. At 11 a.m. I reached AREHAVA and at once started on my round of inspections.

I first visited the village of IOEVI (V.C. BAK'IS) and found the village and surroundings to be clean and in good order. All the Company Plantations were clean and I left instructions for another area to be selected and cleaned by the village people and then fenced ready for lining and planting when next an officer visited the village.

The Old ruined Dubu to the west of the village was ordered to be cleared away as soon as possible. The work of clearing the debris of the Dubu away had been started some time before but it was evident that during the last few weeks the people had declared a holiday and had done no work on it.

I found that the MAREA and MOREHAIRU people had cleaned an area of about 3 acres along the creek to the west of AREHAVA and had already fenced it and planted it with coconuts. This should be rather a good area if it is attended to and not just given over to a garden place by the people.

The planting of new coconut plantations by the AREHAVA and Orokolo people is not looked upon with any great favour as they say that they have no market for the products. As it is now with the low price of copra they receive only 1/6 or 2/- for a bag of copra.

It was certainly a different matter when the village people were receiving from 7/6 to 10/- a bag for their copra but now that the price has fallen the interest in copra making has fallen off as well.

During the morning word was sent to the NOME people that I would be along first thing in the morning to do the Census and also to take the taxes.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Saturday 11th. March.

An early start was made and using a large Delta Division canoe we got to NOME by 8 a.m.

All the village people were told to come out of their houses and then assembled in the middle of the village.

The Census did not take very long as there are very few people left in this village, most of the population having moved to the AREHAVA villages.

The Census completed tax was taken. The Response was poor but on considering the number of natives away under Contract of Service and also that

Mr Rutledge had taken most of the Taxes for 38/39 one could not grumble.

The Company Plantations of the Nomi people are really excellent and the people seem to keep them well cleaned.

1 native was proceeded against in the G.N.M. for failing to build a house after he had been ordered to do so by Mr Rutledge.

On the completion of the NOME work I returned to AREHAVA and then after lunch commenced on the Census in that village group.

This work was continued until 4.30 p.m.

During the evening I worked on census sheets etc until 10.30 p.m.

I may say here that G.L.KIVAVIA is most willing and on two or three occasions during the evening he came to the Rest House to enquire if he could help me.

This day 10 carriers were used.

Sunday 12th. March.

Started early on Census in the villages. At 11 a.m. A.Cs. BOBI and NOIRUE arrived from Karama escorting 27 deserters to Kikori. Mail etc from the A/R.M., C.D.

Continued all day on Census work and knocked off at 6.30 p.m.

Working again during the evening.

Monday 13th. March.

Started A.Cs. BOBI and NOIRUE off early for Kikori with their prisoners.

I found all villages to be in good condition and also the six miles of
try and purchase some land at KOPRA.

(A.C. HARRIS) for the purpose of making a general inspection and also to
left very early and visited the villages of BAMBORA and KOPRA.

Monday 17th March.

Afternoon and evening spent on inspections and in C.M.H.
Saturday and that I was to hold all the Detachments until then.
at noon. Received word from the A.C.H. that he would be at Chokoto on
Tuesday. Quite a few Detachments were found. A.C.H. returned from KOPRA
during the early morning started on the collection of the outstanding

Thursday 19th March.

All day in villages working on the papers.

Wednesday 18th March.

Continued working on the papers until late in the evening.
made A.C. a suitable appointment can be found.
I will see that this A.C. be dismissed and that a native of KAVVA be
placed with a friend until after the departure of the collector.
May along the beach he packed up his gear and moved down to KAVVA and
time in day and when he heard that the Government collector was on his
On Sunday I found that KAVVA had no house at Chokoto but lived all the
some 40 miles away. That morning he looked over by A.C. HARRIS of KAVVA
A.C. of KAVVA a boy called KAVVA was living in the village of KAVVA
working on the papers. During the course of making the census I found th
The Detachment in to KAVVA. The whole day was spent in the village
in the early morning A.C.H. was sent to take the prisoners and

Monday 17th March.

This day 28 sections were used.
low price of paper.
plantations and that they were not to be disturbed with the present
their duty to go ahead with the work of examining the existing company
best house at Chokoto. I impressed on the KAVVA natives that it was
in the late evening all the papers were packed up and we moved to the
house in the village. Heavy job of examining the boys.
one native was charged with paying the boy of his food until under his
Quite a few Detachments.
continued with the C.M.H. at KAVVA. The census only half.

I was unable to finalise the purchase of the land at KOKREA as two of the owners were away- one had gone over to IARI village in the Delta Division and the other was in jail at Koroma. I was rather surprised here as the L.M.S. had put in the Application for this land and then before it was purchased or even seen by a Government Official, they had gone ahead and built Mission buildings on the land in question. The village people and the owners of the land who happened to be present were rather wild about this and asked us if it was right that the L.M.S. should act in this way.

I am rather doubtful if the people will now sell the land as those owners present said that they would not say whether they were willing to sell or not until they had talked with the absentee owners.

I arrived back at the Rest House at 4 p.m. and during the late afternoon and evening settled a few disputes.

This day 6 carriers were used.

Saturday 18th. March.

During the early morning carried out inspection of Plantations roads, water holes, burying grounds etc.

Mr Thompson arrived at 11 a.m. and 6 natives were charged by me with stealing copra. One native convicted and sentenced to 4 months L.M.S. All Tax Defaulters were proceeded against and received varying sentences.

Late afternoon and evening spent in preparing to move on to HERAKERA village in the morning.

Sunday 19th. March.

Left in the early morning for HERAKERA (V.C.MAPE) and on arrival at once started working on the census. When this census was finished I pressed back to MORIAN(V.C.MAPE) and did the census there.

Both of these villages are very small and have only a small population/ In the late afternoon I walked over the track from PAKOWABU village to Veiviri Plantation with Mr E.W. Burke to see what work was necessary on the road as he had been given permission to put in bridges over the creeks so that he could drive his motor truck through from Orokele to the Vallala River at Veiviri. The only work necessary will be the clearing of the track to a width of 12 ft. This should be simple as most of the cutting would be grass and small soft scrub.

This work will fall to the PAKOWABU, BIAI and HAIALI natives to do as it is their duty to keep this track cleared.

Monday 20th. March.

Started taking the tax in HERAKERA and HORIAU very early in the morning. At 9 a.m. Mr Thompson passed on his way back to Koroma and all prisoners and Defaulters were handed over to him to take in to Koroma.

At 10 a.m. I sent all my gear ahead to AUMA Rest House in charge of the Lance Corporal and only retained my table, chair and office Box.

All the villages between HERAKERA and AUMA are small and with only a few people in each.

The villages visited were HONORO (V.C.NAPE), PAKOWABU (V.C.NAPE), BIRIHAIALI (V.C.NAPE), BIAI (V.C.ARAPE).

An A.C. was sent ahead to tell all the people to be ready and my procedure was to move from village to village first taking the census and then collecting the tax. As all Plantations are on the sea shore I was able to inspect the Plantations whilst going from village to village along the beach.

This Meant that I would have a very long days work but it was better than having to walk back from AUMA.

BIAI village was finished just as darkness fell and the last mile along the beach between BIAI and AUMA villages was done in the dark.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Tuesday 21st. March.

At 6 a.m. started doing the census in AUMA (V.C.ARAPE) only a small village. When the Census was completed I started to collect all outstanding taxes. Whilst I was doing this at 9 a.m. the Government vessel Vailala called in a Auma. There were only the native crew on board and they informed me that they were doing all Beacons and 'marks' along the coast whilst they were on their way back to Daru.

When I had finished AUMA I sent all my gear on to VAILALA West Rest House and followed along behind with my office gear.

The villages visited were ARUAPE No.2, ARUAPE No.1, (V.C.ARAPE) and AREHUKIRAPI, KUKIPI, HILOI (V.C.HAREHO)

All these villages were in good order and condition and the tracks linking them were really excellent.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Wednesday 22nd. March.

At 6 a.m. started on the Census for VAILALA West (V.C.HAREHO) and was hardly settled down when the A.Cs from Kikori arrived.

A.Cs. BOBI and NOIRUE reported that they had delivered the 27 deserters to Kikori without any trouble.

When the work in Vailala West was finished I crossed the River to Vailala East Village (V.C. KAKI) and there took all outstanding Taxes. In the afternoon two large canoes and ten carriers were obtained and all the Patrol gear moved to IORI.

The canoes took us as far as LEPOKERA where another 18 carriers were obtained to carry the gear the mile to the Rest House at IORI.

V.C. PARE of IORI and ARIAVO of LEPOKERA reported at the Rest House. During the late afternoon I inspected the villages and found them both to be in good order and condition.

As a matter of fact LEPOKERA is the best village West of Kerema. The people seem to take a pride in this village and as the houses are built on each side of an oblong enclosure with mango trees and ornamental shrubs growing in the centre they have a village that is well worth being proud of.

Thursday 23rd. March.

In the early morning A.Cs. BOBI and NOIRUE were sent in to Kerema with mail and all the prisoners and Defaulters. As soon as these were got away I commenced on the Census and Tax for LEPOKERA. The response when I collected the outstanding Taxes was only fair and a few Defaulters were placed under arrest.

Things were slightly better in IORI but mainly because more of these natives are employed from time to time on MAIRA and VAIVIRI Plantations. Both V.Cs. were very helpful in the work on the census and with the help of C. I. KIVAVIA who comes from IORI village, no difficulty at all was experienced in revising the census sheets.

At 4.45 p.m. a visit was paid to MAIRA Plantation where I had a talk to the Manager Mr Johnston and then carried out a Plantation Inspection. There were no complaints from the Native Labourers and in my opinion the conditions under which they work are ideal. Most of the signed labour is recruited from IORI village and the natives return to their village at night and during the week end. HUIVA is another Plantation which uses this system and it seems to work very well as almost all of the labourers are contented and do not suffer from periodic bouts of home sickness.

At 7 p.m. A.C. ELIJAH arrived from Kerema with two prisoners and a bag of rice which I had sent from a few days before.

The evening was spent in working on the Census sheets with G. I. KIVAVIA. He is a good help with any census matters west of Kerema as he has a really extraordinary memory where names and natives are concerned.

Friday 24th. March.

A.C. ELIJAH was sent away early to return to Kerema in charge of the prisoners and Tax Defaulters.

The Lance Corporal was told to take all the Patrol gear to the Rest House at HILOI in the Belepa District whilst I, with an A.C. and the Interpreter and ten canoe boys left for ARGARO.

The trip up the river to the small creek where the ARGARO track starts occupied about an hour and a half.

Here the canoe was left and we started to walk in over a fair track to the village. As there had been no rain for a few days the track was in fair order but during the wet season I can see that this track would be almost impassable.

After about an hour and a half's walk we arrived at ARGARO village where we were met by V.C. HUAHU and all the village Councillors.

The village is a very good one built along the top of a low ridge and at the time of my visit was very clean and neat.

A small area of land was purchased to the South West of the village for the L.M.S. This land had been applied for some time before but when I purchased it there was a Mission building already on the land.

The V.C. was warned against living away from the village for any length of time as I had heard that he was in the habit of spending most of his time in the village of HAIALI.

The trip back to the coast was made and the canoe boarded and started off down the river for MAIRA Plantation..

At MAIRA I left the canoe and walked through to HILOI village (V.C. ORORA) where I found that the Lance Corporal had brought all the gear along safely and placed it in the Rest House. Soon after my arrival V.C. BHIRA reported from the village of OPA.

During the late afternoon and early evening I carried out the census work in the small village of BELEPA (V.C. ORIRA) and then as it was getting too dark I decided to finish work for the day.

At 7.30 p.m. A.T. DOMANASI arrived from Kerema with a Minute from the A/R.M. G.D. asking that all collections to date should be sent in to the Station by Monday morning.

Saturday 25th. March.

In the very early morning visited the villages of HILOI (V.C.ORIRA) AFURARIA (V.C.ORIRA) and OPA (V.C.BIMIRA). All these villages are small and I was able to get back to the Rest House by Mid-morning to start on the work of collecting the outstanding taxes.

The collections were not very good as Mr Rutledge had collected most of the taxes on the Patrol previous.

The Company Plantations in the BELEPA District were all in good condition as were all tracks between villages.

In the late afternoon all the gear was packed up and we moved down towards the coast to spend the night in the Rest House at HARORA (V.C.KAIRU) After leaving HILOI we passed through the villages of HELAU (V.C.HAREA), POIVA (V.C.HAREA) and thence in to HARORA.

All the Patrol gear was sent ahead whilst I came along behind and carried out the Census work in the first two named villages which are very small. The evening was spent in getting all the money and papers ready for sending in to Kerema in the morning. This day 25 carriers were used.

Sunday 26th. March.

At 6 A.M. A.C. DOMANASI was sent away with the money for Kerema and three tax defaulters. The villages of DUI (V.C.KAIRU) and HARORA were visited in the early morning and the Census work carried out.

On returning to the Rest House all the outstanding taxes were collected.

A few disputes were settled and then all the gear was packed and sent on to the village of KOILAHU whilst I obtained a canoe and set out to visit the village of KAROKARO (V.C.KAIRU). Here the Census was revised and the Tax collected.

On leaving KAROKARO I went on down the river and paid a surprise visit to VAILALA East village to see if certain orders in regard to cleaning the village, had been carried out. I found that they had.

On leaving VAILALA East I walked along the beach to KOILAHU (V.C.HERAVI) where I found all of my gear awaiting me.

During the early evening I called together all the Councillors from the villages of KOILAHU and AIVAU (V.C.HERAVI) and with their help did part of the work connected with the Census.

The village people in the villages east of the Vailala River are of a much better stamp than those to the West. There seems to be a better understanding of what the Government is trying to do for them and consequently they give one much more help.

This day 30 carriers were used.

Monday 27th. March.

At 5 a.m. we went to the village and started work on the Census and as the people were all present at this early hour things went along without a hitch and I was able to complete the checking of the Census by 8.30 a.m. After breakfast the work on the collection of Tax was commenced and as there was really very few Taxes outstanding this did not take long to complete.

After completing the work in the villages all the gear was packed up and sent along to the Rest House at the KEURU villages.

I came along much slower and visited the villages of EPEBEAMO and KEAKEA (V.C. HEVOR) where I checked the census and then collected any outstanding Taxes as I went.

Both of these villages were in good condition and clean. The "Company Plantations were all clean and in good order but like all other Plantations West of Koroma the natives do not use the nuts for making Copra. Most of the time these nuts rot on the ground or are gathered from time to time and used as food.

The trip from KEAKEA to the KEURU villages did not take long and I was able to visit quite a few of the small villages in the KEURU group before darkness fell.

The KEURU group of villages consists of 8 villages namely:-

HEREHERE, OBAHUU, OVAVA, LAKOMA, PEKOI, HIRU, ARURUU and DOBERONO.

All these villages are looked after by two V.Cs. one KAHAMO and the other NAHUI. This day 28 carriers used.

Tuesday 28th. March.

A very early start was made and I worked all day on the Census of the small villages.

At 4 p.m. I paid a visit to HUIVA Plantation and there carried out the work of paying advances to some of the signed on labour.

I informed the Manager, Mr A.D. Drummond that I would be carrying out a Native Labour Inspection on the morrow and he asked me if I could do it during the morning so as not to upset the work.

commenced collecting the taxes.

On returning to the Rest House I spent the evening in working on the Census sheets with the help of C.I.KIVAVIA.

In the KEURU group all the Plantations were found to be in good condition as were the numerous tracks linking the different villages.

Wednesday 29th. March.

An early start was made and all outstanding taxes collected.

Later all the gear was packed up and I moved along the beach to HUIVA Plantation where I carried out a Native Labour Inspection and then collected a few taxes from the Casual labourers working on the Plantation. Later in the morning I moved off to visit the ARAIMIRI Plantation of Mrs E.V.Pridde but on arrival there I found that all the native labour was away in the bush cutting timber to build a new smoke house.

Only the Boss Boy IARI remained on the Plantation.

I informed the Boss Boy that I would return at a later date and then left to walk in to MEI village where the Station Whaler would be awaiting me.

At MEI Creek I found the Whaler in charge of the Corporal and A.C. DOMANESI with six prisoners awaiting me.

I gave instructions to V.C.MARARE that I would return on Friday to work on the Census and Tax in the MEI group of villages.

The crossing to Korona was accomplished and I reported to the A./R.M. at 3 p.m.

This day 28 carriers were used.

Thursday 30th. March.

All day in office handing over cash from my collections etc.

Friday 31st. March.

At 7 a.m. I left in the whaler with six prisoners and 3 A.Cs. for the MEI villages.

The whole of the day was spent in working on the census for the villages of PARIHARA, IRAVAPAIRI No. 2, IRAVAPAIRI No. 1, BUBIRI and IRU.

At 5 p.m. I ceased work for the day and returned to the Station.

Saturday 1st. April.

Day spent in the office charging tax defaulters and collecting taxes from natives whom I had given time to find their money.

Monday 3rd. April.

At 7 a.m. left for MEI in the whaler and on my arrival there at once commenced collecting the Taxes.

Quite a large number of Tax Defaulters were found in the MEI villages and these were taken in to Kerema with me when I returned in the late afternoon.

On leaving MEI at the completion of the Tax Collection I went via MEI creek to the village of UARIPI (V.C.MAI'E) and there started at once on the Census. I continued with this work until late in the afternoon and then returned to Kerema.

Tuesday 4th. April.

Suffering from an attack of fever all day so did not visit UARIPI.

Wednesday 5th. April.

At an early hour left for UARIPI in the whaler and completed the Census revision and then collected all of the outstanding taxes.

The return to the station was made at 5 p.m.

From the 30th. March to this date the same six prisoners were used as crew in the whaler.

F. A. Bensted. P.O.

Summary.

Villages. All villages visited on this patrol were in from fair to good condition. The best village West of Kerema is, in my opinion, the village of LEPOKERA.

Company Plantations. The people are very unwillingly keeping all plantation clean but as they are not making any copra and only in a few instances using the nuts, they go about the work of extending the present plantations in very bad grace and are not at all willing. Most of the Plantations inspected were in fair order and with a good copra price I am of the opinion that the people could all earn their Tax Money and more by making copra from the nuts in these Plantations.

Roads, tracks etc. All roads and tracks used on this Patrol were found to be in fair order. The tracks in the BELEPA and KEURU Districts were particularly good.

Rest Houses and Barracks. With the exception of the Rest House and Barracks at ARENAVA (new ones to be erected) all the structures West of Kerema are now in very good order.

Tax Collections. There are now very few Taxes outstanding. Most of these will be collected from natives at the moment under Contract of Service.

Census. The Revision of the Census in all villages West of Kerema has now been completed and as the proper count has not yet been made no accurate figure for the population in the Taxable Villages can yet be given. As an estimate I would say that there are between 7500 and 8000 natives in the Taxable Villages West of Kerema.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

18 of 1938/39

KEREMA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by G. W. Toogood. P.O. to
Eastern Boundary for the purpose of
collecting tax

Left Station on 24th April, 1939 Returned to Station on 2nd June, 1939

Number of Carriers employed 409 Number of Police taken 2

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge -

Villages visited LOVE, MORIO, LAULILAVA, LAULOVO, SAROTA, IOKEA, BIARU,
AVIALA, KAVORA, POPO, LALAIPIPI, MIRIVASI, MIRIHEA, ULITAI, TAPALA,
SAVAIVIRI, HEAVALA, HEATOARE, KAILAPI, KUKIPI, TAVAFURU, HAEU HAEU,
LELEFIRU, KOARU, ERAVA, KARAMA DIST., UAMAI DIST., SILO DIST..

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

S936/10 38.—1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 17th June, 1939

[Signature]
Officer in charge of Station

P A T R O L R E P O R T
T A X
E A S T O F K E R E M A

OFFICER: G. W. TOOGOOD. P.O.

D A T E: 24th APRIL, 1939.

Acting on the instructions of the A/R.M. G.D., I left Kerema Station at 8.0 a.m., in company with A.C.'s. DOMAMASI, MIRI, IRIRI, BERI & ABAIA, and with 26 Prisoners as carriers, proceeded over the Cupola to SILO, where one of the Prisoners, who had become ill was sent back to Kerema in charge of the Silo V.C., after rearranging the loads, and engaging several village natives as change carriers, continued on along the beach to KOARU, the various V.C.'s being notified as to what date the patrol would be returning to their villages. The night was spent at the KOARU Rest House. Food was purchased during the day at KARAMA and KOARU for the Prisoners.

Number of Carriers employed: 20

Tuesday, 25th April,

Left KOARU at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded on along the coast to MOTU MOTU, where a halt was called for lunch, food for the Prisoners being purchased from the village people. After lunch continued on to LESE, where it was found that one of the Prisoners had passed over his load to change carriers and cleared off. The night was spent at the LESE Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 20

Wednesday, 26th April,

A.C. KOTO reported, en route from Kairuku to Kerema, and was dispatched with A.C. ABAIA, in charge of 18 of the Kerema Prisoners and instructions to apprehend the escaped prisoner, and escort him also to Kerema, where his case could be dealt with. Left LESE at 8.30 a.m., with village natives as carriers, and proceeded on to IOKEA. Detained there owing to minor disputed in the village, and held C.N.M. Spent the night at the Rest House, a courtesy call being made in the evening on Mr. H. A. Brown of the L.M.S. Mission at MORU.

Number of Carriers employed: 50

Thursday, 27th April,

Left IOKEA at 8.0 a.m. and proceeded on to OIAPU, arriving at about Mid-day. Sent a note to the Manager of The Papuan Apenapi Petroleum Co., that I would call there the following day if convenient to him. During the afternoon Family Bonus was paid to the villages of LOVE and MORIO, and tax collected at LOVE. The night

(2)

was spent at the MORIO Rest House. Both the villages of LOVE and MORIO were in good, clean order, and the Rest House, which has been recently rebuilt; is among the best on the coast. No tax defaulters from LOVE.

Number of Carriers employed: 22

Friday, 28th April,

Collected Tax at the Villages of MORIO, LAUILAVA and LAULOVO, and paid Family Bonus at the two last named villages. No defaulters and all villages clean and tidy. At 11.30 a.m. visited the P.A.P. Co., and held enquiry into allegation of Indecent Exposure, also collected Tax from the Natives employed as Casuals with the Company Accepted the invitation of Mr. L. Owen to stay to Dinner and listen to one of Herr Hitler's speeches that night, as there was much work on hand, the invitation to stay the night was declined. Night was spent at the MORIO Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 3

Saturday, 29th April,

Checked the already compiled revision of Census at the four OIAFU villages, and left that district for SAROTA, after having dispatched A.C.'s. IRIRI and BERI, with the remaining Kerema Prisoners, and reports of various matters, to Kerema. Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at SAROTA, also checked Census Revision, then proceeded on to IOKEA, arriving there late at night. The night was spent at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 22

Sunday, 30th April,

The day was spent at IOKEA on Census Revision.

Monday, 1st May,

Remained at IOKEA. Collected Tax and Paid Family Bonus. Rest House and Barracks in sound condition. Village clean and orderly.

Tuesday, 2nd May,

Left IOKEA at 10.0 a.m., after having settled several minor village disputes, and proceeded on to BIARU. Paid all Family Bonus and settled disputes. Village clean and in order, as was also the Rest House, where the night was spent. Number of Carriers employed: 28

Wednesday, 3rd May,

Collected Tax and checked Census at BIARU. Then proceeded on to LESE. Paid Family Bonus at AVIALA that night. Night being put in at the Rest House, which was in very good order, as was also the Village.

Number of Carriers employed: 28

Thursday, 4th May.

Remained at LESE, collected Tax at AVIALA and KAVORA, and paid Family Bonus at KAVORA. No defaulters. Checked Census revision at both these villages. Villages clean and in good order. A.C. BERI reported from Kerema with mail.

Friday, 5th May.

Dispatched A.C. BERI back to Kerema with Mail, Etc., and after settling village disputes, left LESE and proceeded by road to POPO, inspecting the Oilfields en route, and indicating to various interested Natives the material that was serving no useful purpose in its present location, and offers for same being noted for submission to the Maxx Commissioner for Mines. All material on the Oilfields was fairly well clear of grass, but the V.C. was instructed to extend the Fire-breaks. Arriving at POPO in the late afternoon, Family Bonus was paid and C.N.M. held. The night was spent at the Rest House, which, like the village was in excellent order, this being about the best kept District in the Gulf Division.

Number of Carriers employed: 22

Saturday, 6th May.

Collected Tax, and then proceeded down the Kapuri River by Canoe, to the coast, and along to MOTU MOTU. Paid Family Bonus & collected Tax at LALAIPIPI, which village was in good, clean order. Spent the night at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 22

Sunday, 7th May.

Checked Census revision at LALAIPIPI, MIRIVASI and MIRIHEA.

Monday, 8th May.

Remained at MOTU MOTU. Collected Tax and Paid Family Bonus at MIRIVASI and MIRIHEA. No defaulters. All villages clean and in good order.

Tuesday, 9th May.

Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at ULITAI. Checked the revision of ULITAI Census. A.C. KOTO reported from Kerema.

Wednesday, 10th May.

Dispatched A.C. KOTO back to Kerema with Minutes, Etc., and after settling various village disputes, left MOTU MOTU and went up to MOVIAMI by canoe. Villages clean and in order, Rest House and Barracks in good condition. Held C.N.M. and settled various minor disputes, arranged for Canoes to be ready on the morrow to

(4)

Go up to TAPALA. Night spent at the MOVIAMI Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 12

Thursday, 11th May,

Proceeded by canoe to TAPALA and SAVAIVIRI. Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at both Villages. No Defaulters. Villages in very good order. Returned in the evening to MOVIAMI.

Number of Carriers employed: 6

Friday, 12th May,

Remained at MOVIAMI. Collected Tax and Paid Family Bonus at HEAVALA. Checked Census. Mr. H. A. Brown of the L.M.S. Mission arrived during the late afternoon, on one of his periodical Medical visits. Called on Mr. W. Field at his new Trading Site near Moviavi. He had no complaints to make.

Saturday, 13th May,

Collected Tax, paid Family and checked census at HEATOARE. Father PILLEAUX of the Terapo Mission arrived about 11.0 a.m. with Taxable natives who are working as Casuals at Terapo. He accepted the invitation to lunch, and left shortly afterwards. No defaulters from MOVIAMI. Completed Tax by 4.30 p.m., so proceeded down to KUKIPI, where the night was spent at the Rest House, both Rest house and Barracks in good order.

Number of Carriers employed: 10

Sunday, 14th May,

Remained at KUKIPI checking Census sheets and writing mail.

Monday, 15th May,

Dispatched A.C. MIRO to Kerema, in charge of a Prisoner, and mail, minutes, Etc.. Collected KUKIPI Tax and completed Census.

Tuesday, 16th May,

Paid Family Bonus at KUKIPI and KALLAPI. Settled minor disputes among the village people.

Wednesday, 17th May,

Left KUKIPI at 6.30 a.m., and proceeded to LELEFIRU, paying Family Bonus and Collecting Tax at TAVAFURU and HABU HABU. The new village of TAVAFURU is almost complete, almost the entire population having scrapped the old village, and moved two or three hundred yards further inland, it is quite a commendable move, and by present appearances it looks as if the villages of TAVAFURU and HABU HABU will combine, providing the latter contin-

ued to be in the same village where they have commenced.

(5)

It was pleasing to note that the general community of HABU HABU village, have at last made a concerted effort to remove from the now "Forbidden Settlement" area, and to form a new village about half a mile east of the old settlement. Only five families refused to move, and the responsible man of each of these families was proceeded against in the C.N.M. held at LELEFIRU. The rest of the people, many of whom although having made some effort to move, were still a little half hearted, and appeared to be just stalling until the Patrol had gone, were informed that I should return in about a week to observe the progress in the building of the new houses.

The night was spent the Rest House at LELEFIRU, which was in a sound condition. Number of Carriers employed: 28

Thursday, 18th May,

Remained at LELEFIRU, collected Tax and paid Family Bonus. Village as clean as could be expected, in view of the tide erosion on all sides.

Friday, 19th May,

On Census at Lelefiru. And late in the afternoon, continued on to KOARU, where the night was spent. The Village, Rest House and Barracks were all in particularly good order.

Number of Carriers employed: 26

Saturday, 20th May,

Remained at KOARU and worked on Census.

Sunday, 21st May,

Continued with Census. the rest of the day was spent writing private mail.

Monday, 22nd May,

Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at KOARU and ERAVA. Mr. A.R.M. Thompson arrived from Kerema, in the late afternoon, and the kind invitation of the Rev. H. A. Brown, for us to stay at the empty Mission House, was accepted.

Tuesday, 23rd May,

Accompanied Mr. Thompson as far as Motu Motu, then returned to HABU HABU, where it was found that a great deal of work had been done on the new village since my last visit. 17 Houses are well on the way to being completed, and in all 23 are in the course of construction. Also nearly all the old houses on the For-

(6)

bidden area have been pulled down, only about six remaining standing, one of those belonging to the Ferryman, which of course will remain. As all was progressing satisfactorily, I returned to Koaru.

Number of Carriers employed: 4

Wednesday, 24th May,

Left KOARU at 8.0 a.m., and proceeded on along the coast to KARAMA. Collected Tax and Paid Family Bonus at the Villages of URU and ARU. Spent the night at the Rest House, which like the Barracks, were in fair condition. Number of Carriers employed: 26

Thursday, 25th May,

Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at the following Villages:- KAIVIPUKARI, IVAFIRU, MOROI, NAVAIVIOPATERA, NAUKIAVA, and KEREVA, all in the KARAMA District.

Friday, 26th May,

Collected Tax and Paid Family Bonus at IVARIKA, KIOVIARAFURU and PARAKOU, and completed Census revision of the first 4 villages of this District.

Saturday, 27th May,

Completed Census revision of the remainder of the KARAMA Villages, and later in the afternoon left Karama, and continued on to UAMAI, where the night was spent in the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 21

A.C's. KADA & ABAIA, having reported from Mr. Thompson the previous evening, in charge of 21 Kerema Prisoners, were dispatched first thing in the morning for Kerema, in charge of a mail.

Sunday, 28th May,

Proceeded with Census revision of UAMAI Villages.

Monday, 29th May,

Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at MORA'A, MARU, PARAKAHU and NOKUOVO.

Tuesday, 30th May,

Collected Tax and paid Family Bonus at POMARA, IROPE and LALABU, and continued with the revision of Census of these villages. Mr. P.O. Bensted arrived in the late afternoon, and also spent the night at the UAMAI Rest House.

Wednesday, 31st May,

Completed the Census revision of the Uamai Villages, and

(7)

Proceeded to SILO, where Tax was collected for the villages of IVEFIRU, IVAN'U and AIKABULUKA. The night being spent at the Rest House.

Number of Carriers employed: 19

Thursday, 1st June, 1939.

Collected Tax for SILO village, and paid Family Bonus for the four SILO Villages. Checked Census and settled various minor village disputes. New SILO Village, built on a hill near the old site, is pretty well settled and established, it is an excellent effort, and can now be classed among the best of the villages on the coast, and I think will help to solve the decreasing population problem of this District. As usual there are about half a dozen imbeciles who refuse to shift from the old, and unhealthy site, but I think the rest of the village people will attend to these objectors in the very near future.

Friday, 2nd June,

Completed the Census revision for the SILO villages, and left at about 11.0 a.m. for Kerema, crossed the Cupola and arrived at the Station at about 2.0 p.m., where I reported back to the R.M. G.D.

Number of Carriers employed: 20

Total number of Carriers employed: 409

GENERAL - REMARKS

No natives refused or were obliged to carry on this Patrol.

As was to be expected, all villages were in good condition, clean and tidy, having all had good warning of the approach of the Patrol.

Mention must be made of the excellent, and valuable, work being done on this section of the coast by the Rev. H. A. Brown, of the L.M.S. Mission at MORU. Mr. Brown is doing a medical patrol to all the villages between Kerema and Ciapu, every six or seven weeks, and sending all natives suffering from serious ailments to the Hospital at Meru, others suffering from minor Ulcers and infections, he is treating in the villages. It is impossible not to notice the result, especially compared with conditions six months ago, particularly in regard to Ulcers and Yaws, which are now, in many villages, conspicuous by their absence. Undoubtedly if this good work is continued, with the present enthusiasm, Yaws and Ulcers will be almost entirely ex-

(3)

Throughout this Patrol, native rumour had it, that Great Britain was well and truly at war with an enemy, but speculations were rife as to who that enemy was. At a number of the larger villages I was approached by deputations, wishing to know if the Government wanted the natives to go to Sydney to fight for them, and that they wanted to help. They were assured that, at the moment, there was no particular war in progress, but that should one crop up, every consideration would be given to their offers for service.

N.B. These offers are rather amazing, as my impressions to date, of the natives in this locality, are that the firing of the first Howitzer, would be the signal for a concerted rush, back to home and mother.

There were no Tax Defaulters on this Patrol, and the whereabouts of the natives away from their villages has been noted. At the conclusion of the patrol there were only 172 outstanding Taxes to be collected, excluding natives under Contract of Service, and the majority of these are in, or around, Port Moresby, and it is hoped will shortly be apprehended.

G. J. Good

P. O.

12. 6. 39.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

19 of 38/39

KINTLA

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by F. A. WENTZEL, P.O. to

the TIVARI POLICE CAMP and Mining Camps for the purpose of
changing the Police Stationed at the Camps and to issue stores etc.
and also to carry out Native Labour Inspections at the various Camps.

Left Station on 30/5/39 Returned to Station on 9/6/39Number of Carriers employed 222 Number of Police taken 4

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge _____

Villages visited SILS, WOMAI, KARANA, KOGARU, ISSEWIKU, KUM I.I.

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8936/10.38.—1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date 13 June, 1939

Wentzel
 Officer in charge of Station

462/25/39

Hon: G. S.

P.M.

Patrol Report No. 19 of 33/39.

In acknowledgement of your letter No. 1522/214/39 of
the 3rd ultimo, I fear Mr. T. O. Bennett was not explicit enough.
Mr. T. O. Higginson must not be confused with the late Mr. C. B.
Higginson, whose grave was being given attention.

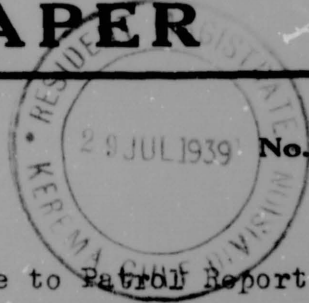
Nar

R. A. G. P.

2/3/39.

MINUTE PAPER

R.M.G.D.,
Kerema.



No. 1522/ 214 /39.

With reference to Patrol Report No.19 of 38/39 under date 1st June, why was it necessary for the Patrol Officer to prepare a grave for Mr. Higginson, since it is quite clear from the rest of the Patrol Report that Mr. Higginson is still alive?

H. W. [Signature]
G.S.
3.7.1939.

Report of a Patrol by F.A. Bensted, P.O. to the TIVERI Police Camp for the purpose of changing the Police stationed there and also to issue the quarterly stores and to carry out Labour Inspections at the Various Mining Camps.

Tuesday, 30th May, 1939.

Acting on the instructions received from the R.M.G.D. I left the station at 9 a.m. on the first stage of the journey to Kukipi. Accompanying me were A.Cs. KOTO, MARI, NOIRUM and HAVANIA. These A.Cs were to be left at the Camp to replace the four A.Cs at present stationed there.

Twenty prisoners in charge of A.Cs. KADA and ABAIA were used to carry all the gear as far as the village of SILO.

I arrived at Silo at 12.30 p.m. and was there met by the Councillors and V.C. I arranged for twenty village natives to carry the gear on to WOMAI and then gave the prisoners their mid-day meal and sent them back to Karama.

At 3.30 p.m. I arrived in WOMAI where I found Mr P.O. Toogood at work on his Tax Patrol. I decided to stay here for the night and go on through to Kukipi in the morning.

All villages I passed through were found to be clean and in good order.

I did not visit the new village at SILO as I did not have enough time as I did not want to miss making the connection with the Ronald S. at Kukipi. This day 40 carriers were used.

Wednesday 31st May.

At 6 a.m. the V.C. turned up with 40 carriers and soon afterwards made a start for Kukipi. The trip along the beach was uneventful and after passing through the villages of KARAMA and ROAKU we eventually arrived at LALAFIRU at 11 a.m. Here the 40 carriers from WOMAI were paid off and two canoes and 10 carriers from this village were obtained to take us through to KUKIPI. The small creek behind the village of TAVAFURU was used as the canoes were small and we would only have to drag them a few hundred yards over the soft mud in the middle of the creek.

KUKIPI was reached at 3 p.m. and V/C/ PBAVIRI reported immediately.

The rest of the afternoon was spent in sorting out gear to take up the river to the Tiveri Police Camp.

I went and saw Mr T.O. Higginson and found out from him that he would only be able to do one trip as he did not have enough fuel for the launch to be able to do two as usual.

I made arrangements for him to wait at OLIPAI for me whilst I went in and carried out the necessary work at the Dredge and at Mr Bethune's place on Mosquito Creek.

At 7 p.m. the Ronald S. arrived from Kairuku but as it was dark no attempt was made to unload the cargo.

Thursday 1st. June.

In the early morning the cargo from the Ronald S. was unloaded onto the launch. After a long wait I was informed by Mr Higginson that we would not be able to start for bulldog until early the next morning as he had to wait for a boy to come from KOARU village with some gear he wanted.

The late morning and whole afternoon were spent in inspecting KUKIPI village (V.C. WEAVER) and also in making arrangements to have the grave of Mr Higginson cleaned ready for fencing etc. on my return from OLIPAI.

Friday 2nd. June.

All the gear was loaded on to the launch by 4.30 p.m. and as soon as it was light a start was made. My party consisted of myself, four A.Cs and my personal servant. Mr Higginson had the launch boys and a number of labourers for the different camps. The whole party totaled thirteen. An unlucky number.

The launch was very heavily loaded and as the river was in flood only slow progress was made. Camp was made at 6 p.m. at a large garden called by the Mōviavi people, KOLIMATERA. This garden is approximately half way to OLIPAI. A little rain fell during the night and the river continued to rise as a large quantity of timber was noted being borne down on the crest of the flood waters.

Saturday 3rd. June.

By 6 a.m. were again moving a light rain falling to help make things damp and uncomfortable. Fair progress was made and in two and one half hours we had reached the spot called PAPA. At noon we had reached KOVIO and our hopes of reaching OLIPAI before dark began to fall slightly.

To cap things off the engine of the launch went wrong and would develop no power. Camp was made at 4.30 p.m. at a place called "The Antledge Hut" and here we spent the rest of the afternoon and part of the evening in trying to repair the engine but without any great success.

Sunday 4th. June.

An early start was made and OLIPAI was reached by 11 a.m. Here I found A.C. PARAU awaiting the launch. I sent word in to both the Dredge and to Mr Bothams to expect me in at their Camps about Tuesday. A.C. BERI was sent to Mr Bothams Camp at MOSUITO Creek and A.C. NOIRUE to the Dredge to relieve the A.Cs. stationed there.

It was not long before we moved off again and the long pld up the river to the Bulldog Landing was commenced. Although the Distance is only 15 miles it was 5.30 p.m. before we arrived. I unloaded my gear at once and went in to the Police Camp where A.C. MANAI reported. I found everything in perfect order. And I must commend A.C. MANAI on the manner in which he carried out his duties at the Camp.

A very large quantity of food was found to be still on hand and the A.C. informed us that he and the prisoners had been practically living on the food grown in the Garden attached to the Camp.

The whole of the evening until 8 p.m. was spent in checking over and listing stores ready to hand over to A.C. KOTO who was to be left in charge of the Camp. Even though there were only three persons working at the Camp they had managed to keep it in very good order and also to keep the 'Drome' cleared enough to enable two places to land within the last two months.

Monday 5th. June.

At 5 a.m. I left with A.C. MANAI and A.C. HAVAKIA for Mr Garbatt's Camp at Ironstone Creek. Heavy rain had been falling all through the night and all the low lying land was flooded. After swimming three creeks I eventually arrived at the mining camp three and one half hours after I left Tiveri. Here I carried out an inspection and some Native Labour work. I found all in the Camp to be in very good order and changed A.C. HAVAKIA with A.C. KURUUA, the latter to return to Koroma with me.

The evening was spent at the Camp as heavy rain started to fall during the early afternoon and I did not think that I would be able to get back to the Police Camp through the flood.

Tuesday 6th. June.

At a very early hour I left the Camp of Mr Garbutt and proceeded to Bulldog. Here I completed the work at the Camp and handed over to A. C. KOTC. I explained to him that he was to be in charge of the camp and that he was responsible for all articles and food on the list which he had signed. At 11 a.m. I returned to the Launch and we proceeded down river to OLIPAI Landing. Here I informed Mr Higginson that I would be away for about 48 hours and as he was not able to do two trips it would be perhaps better for him to go straight on to KUKRI and I would build a raft on my return from the mining Camps and then float down. Mr Higginson very kindly told me that he would wait for 48 hours for me so as to save me the trouble of building the rafts. At 3 p.m. I started off to walk in to Mr Bethune's Camp on Mosquito Creek. As luck would have it I had a 400 candle Power Lantern with me and thus we were able to proceed quite comfortably in the dark. About 6 p.m. heavy rain started to fall and we had a little difficulty in getting along on the flooded track. At 8 p.m. our lamp got put out in a creek and then, as a brother officer once put it, "we ran out of track". It was half an hour before I managed to find where I was and then only by falling in to one of Mr Bethune's tail races. At 9 p.m. we arrived at the Camp very tired and a little the worse for wear.

Wednesday 7th. June.

In the early morning I carried out a Native Labour Inspection and found everything to be in order and the labour quite contented.

A. C. KOTC was charged with A. C. ORMA.

As soon as my work was completed I left for the Dredge at Sunset and arrived there at about 11 a.m.

Here another Inspection was carried out and I found all to be in order with the labour quite contented. As the Dredge is working about a mile and a half from the actual Camp it was dark before I got back from inspecting it and so decided to stop the night and leave for OLIPAI in the early morning.

Thursday 8th. June.

As no rain fell during the night I was able to walk out to the Landing in two and a half hours. A. C. ROIRCE was left at the Dredge to report A. C. ARABU.

On reaching the OLIPAI landing I found the launch waiting and we got away with no delay. Going down the river I had A.C. HANA and his wife, A.C. ORISA, A.C. KURUUA, A.C. HANA and my personal servant. KUKIPI was reached in the afternoon.

At KUKIPI I was met by V.C. HAVIRI who handed me a letter from the R.M.S.P. asking me to carry out a little work connected with the natives from KOFUOTU. As luck would have it both of these boys were present and the work was completed with no delay. I made arrangements in the evening for a canoe and carriers to be ready at 5 a.m. to take me across to LEMPIRU.

Friday 9th. June.

With 10 carriers I left at 5 a.m. for LEMPIRU where I arrived at 7 a.m. Here I was met by the V.C. HAVIRI ready with 20 carriers for me. Here I paid off the KUKIPI carriers and moved off again to KOARI.

At KOARI (V.C. HAVIRI) I found the village to be in good order.

On leaving KOARI I proceeded to KARAMA where I paid off the carriers and collected another 20. V.C. HAVIRI reported and was very helpful.

The route from KARAMA to KOFUOTU occupied about 45 minutes and here I inspected the village accompanied by V.C. HAVIRI. Everything was found to be in order. Another 40 minutes put us in SIKU village (V.C. HAVIRI). Here a stop was made for lunch. From SIKU we went straight on in to KOFUOTU where we arrived at 5 p.m. I reported at once to the R.M.
This day 30 carriers were used.

H.P. Penst P.O.

PATROL REPORT

STATION NUMBER

23 of 30/30

STATION.

REPORT OF A PATROL made by L. J. [unclear] to[unclear] for the purpose ofexamining a certain area of land purchased from the B.L.C. natives in 193and also to make a traverse of B.L.C. Creek.Left Station on 17/6/35 Returned to Station on 18/6/35Number of Carriers employed 24 Number of Police taken 2Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge [unclear]Villages visited [unclear]

(1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.

(2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.

(3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.

(4) The space below is not to be written in.

(5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

7405/3.35-1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary.

Date 17 June, 1935[Signature]
Officer in charge of Station

Report of a Patrol from Kerema to SILO Creek for the purpose of locating a certain area of land purchased from the natives of SILO and LORABADA in 1931 and also to make a traverse of SILO Creek.

Wednesday 14th. June 1939.

Acting on instructions received from the R.M.C.D. I left the Station at 8/30 a.m. with Corporal JIGORI and A.C.TURIAI and C.I.MIRIA.

16 Prisoner Carriers were used to carry my gear to the Rest House at SILO and these prisoners were placed under the care of A.C.KURUMIA for return to Kerema.

All my gear was sent on ahead in charge of the Corporal and A.C.KURUMIA to await me at SILO. With A.C.TURIAI and C.I.MIRIA I started from a fixed point on the Station and commenced to make a traverse of the track to the start of the upper Rubber Plantation. As I was using a compass and a chain I think that this Traverse should be very accurate.

On arriving at the corner post of the Upper Plantation I finished the traverse and then continued on to SILO village where I arrived at 1 p.m.

I was met here by the two V.Cs. NAVAI and MAILAU.

As soon as the prisoners had eaten their noon meal they were sent back to Kerema in charge of A.C.KURUMIA.

During the afternoon I had a long talk with the V.Cs. and Councillors and the old men of the villages about the land I was trying to locate.

Most of the persons questioned remembered it and told me that they could lead me to it in the morning.

The rest of the afternoon was spent in plotting the traverse I had made on my way over from Kerema in the morning.

Thursday 15th. June.

At 6 a.m. I left the village and started the traverse of SILO creek.

Quite a large number of canoes accompanied me up the creek with the occupant or occupants making remarks about where I should go and what I should do.

One lad had evidently been with someone running a compass traverse and held up the party for a short time by insisting on giving a lecture on the correct procedure with a compass, using a coconut shell to demonstrate with.

The area of land was easily located about a mile to the north of the village. Although the corner posts had all rotted away the people were able to show me the approximate positions in which they had been placed and these positions corresponded fairly correctly with the tracing of the area I had with me.

Contrary to popular beliefs SILEO creek is not very large and is only navigable by canoe for about two miles.

Above this point the creek is only about 15 feet wide and has about six inches of water in it. According to the village people this trickle of water comes down from a hill near to the headwaters of the SIRAUWA River. The country in here is of a rolling nature with the hills rising to an elevation of about 150 feet. The country is very heavily timbered. No garden are to be found to the North of the canoe limit on the creek all being between the coast and this point.

On my way back down the creek I noted that one of the canoe crew was speaking of a cave situated about half a mile up the creek from the Rest House. I asked about this cave and the man showed me the entrance to it. As it appeared to be of some size I sent for my Lamp and then entered it. Inside I found it to be quite large and consisting of two distinct cave groups in the limestone, joined by a very small and narrow passage. I made my exit from the caves at a point near to the large area of grass on the hill-side to the north west of the village and about half a mile from where I had entered.

I was rather interested as I knew that the members of the Oil Companies who had been working around Kerema had been making enquiries about caves but with no success. This is evidently another instance of villagers never volunteering information.

On my arrival back at the Rest House I plotted the traverse I had made on the Creek and fixed the position of the Land in relation to it.

After lunch 16 carriers were assembled and all gear packed up and the train to Kerema started. I arrived at Kerema at 6 p.m. and reported to the R.M.C.D. All carriers were paid off and allowed to return to their villages. This day 18 Carriers were used.

H. R. Kerema R.C.

Articles	Quantity taken on Patrol.	QUANTITIES ISSUED AND VALUE.				Returned.			Remarks.
		Police.	Carriers.	Others.	Total Used.	Government Cost.			
Rice	20	8	4	-	12	1	2	8	
Biscuits									
Meat									
Sugar									
Tea									
Soap									
Tobacco	4		1½	¼	1¾	4	4	2½	P.N.F. Guides etc.
Matches									
Kerosene									
Tents									
Flies									
Lamps									
Buckets									
Kerosene Cans									
Knives and Sheaths									
Knives, 18 in.									
Knives, others									
Belts									
Pouches									
Print									
Twill									
Handkerchiefs									
Beads									
Mirrors									
Axes									
Half Axes									
Tomahawks									
Total							5	6	

NOTE.—When an article such as a tent is issued, but is returned for future use, the value should not be entered.

Report of a Patrol to Kairuku from Kerema on transfer to the former Station.

By W. N. H. THOMPSON A.R.M.



Monday 22nd May 1939. After handing over the affairs of the Gulf Division to Mr. R.M. Vivian, I left Kerema 7.30 A.M with 3 A. 24 prison carriers and another 12 volunteers from IPISI village. Road over the Capola in good condition and reached KOARU village, a distance of about 25 miles, at 4 p.m. Found Mr Toogoo there and we were kindly given accommodation in the house on KOARU Plantation, which the L.M.S have recently bought from Mr. Clarke, who has left the country.

Tuesday 23rd. Mr Toogoo accompanied me to MOTU MOTU. En route we passed through HABUHABU village, which has been declared a forbidden settlement by His Excellency. The P.O showed me the site of their new village and the transfer was being carried out with little trouble apparently. High tides swept through the old site and left it with tottering houses and in a state of indescribable filth and disorder from debris brought up from the sea and not washed back again when the tides receded. It really passes belief why natives should want to remain on under such conditions, but unless the Govt. steps in and forces them out, they will not shift. Another instance where compulsion is so necessary for the comfort and well-being of the native. Camped for the night in the LESE Rest House, which I did not reach till dusk. Rest house in good order and found the ferry service over the numerous creeks and rivers working very well. I do not think the distance quite so far as yesterday, but the crossing of the carriers over each river or creek took up a deal of time.

Wed. 24th. Sent the IPISI carriers back to R.M at Kerema for payment, some of them wanted cash. I had none with me. Thence to IOKEA, where I paid a short visit to Rev. Brown of the L.M.S at their station. This gentleman not long in the country is doing some very valuable medical work. His system is to visit all houses in a village and find out the sick, who are hiding and induce them to come to his hospital. I asked him if he would mind my stating in my report the remarks he made re

A.N.G.D
Copy to you for you information please
with A.R.M. Kainaku 29.5.39



PATROL REPORT

[G.P. 67

STATION NUMBER

22. 28/39

Kerama

STATION

REPORT OF A PATROL made by **G. W. Toogood. P.O.** to

PORT MORESBY for the purpose of

Vacation leave

Left Station on **19th June, 1939** Returned to Station on _____

Number of Carriers employed **112** Number of Police taken **One**

Name of Vessel used and of Officer in Charge _____

Villages visited **SILU, BAHAI, KAPAMA, MOARU, DELEPIRU, HANU HANU, TAVAFURU, ZUKUPI, MOTU MOTU, LESE, BIARU, IONEA, GIAPU, KIVORI, WAIMA, PINUPAK A KAIRUKU, DELINA, HISIU, MANU MANU, GOROHU, EIDO, LEALEA, PAPA, BOERA, PORARADA, HANUABADA.**

- (1) Unless the patrol is a regular routine patrol in a long-settled district a sketch map of the district patrolled should accompany the report, showing, as nearly as possible, the positions of the places visited and a copy is to be made for filing on the station.
- (2) In the body of the report the name of the village should be followed by the name of the V.C. The number of houses and the population, as nearly as possible, should also be stated. The customs of the natives should as much as possible be noted and reported.
- (3) The Patrol Report is to be enclosed in this jacket, which, properly filled in, is to be sent to the Government Secretary immediately after each patrol.
- (4) The space below is not to be written in.
- (5) The cost of the patrol must be shown on the back, in the space provided.

8936/10.38.—1,000.

Forwarded to the Government Secretary

Date **30th June**, 19**39**.

Nato
Officer in charge of Station

Mr. P.C. Teogood.

Patrol.

On route to Kairuku (and Port Moresby) overland please make the following stoppages at :-

IMBUIABU and warn any MIRINEA people who are said to be putting up some houses at the forbidden settlement of IMBUIABU that they are simply not permitted to do so, under penalties.

MURIT and hand P.C. Harrison a bill for sunset.

LEFE - see enclosed Minute (also one for 1929).

POKAI and hand C.N.M., natives regarding to case for N.M.As, and award 15 prize for B.K. Village 1933/39. Have signed voucher returned immediately.

SILO - collect any outstanding taxes and hand letter to P.A.P.Co.

This morning there left for KAIRUKU 3 defendants and a witness for C.C. at that point. They were in charge of A.C. WARABU and were to wait for you at TOKAI. From that place please return the A.C. and hand the 3 natives over to A.C. DOMAMASI, who will be accompanying you only to as far as KAIRUKU, there no doubt the A.R.M. will provide you with an A.C. of his detachment.

Take with you tax receipt book No. 208 and official receipt book No. A109 and return them both either from KAIRUKU or through the Post Office PORT MORESBY, together with any monies, as a registered package, to this office. If from KAIRUKU per A.C. DOMAMASI; if from PORT MORESBY for certain by the "Ronald S".

I enclose two blank, but signed, Patrol Jackets. You can at Port Moresby send the Original straight to the Hon: G.S. and copy (by the "Ronald S") to me. Number it 22.

Six prisoners will on Monday morning accompany you to as far as SILO. There please hand them over to a Village Constable for return that day to Kerema.

Raw
R.M.G.D.

17/6/39.

Held C.N.M., and six natives were found guilty and convicted

PATROL REPORT
TO
PORT MORESBY FOR LEAVE

OFFICER: G. W. Toogood, P.O.

DATE: 19th June, 1979.

On the instructions of the R.M. G.D., I left Kerema Station at 5.45 a.m., accompanied by A.C. DOMAMASI and six Prisoners, and proceeded over the Cupola to SILO. As the Village Constable was not in evidence, I continued on with the Prisoners to UAMAI, where fresh Carriers were obtained and the Prisoners returned to Kerema in charge of the V.C. After holding an enquiry into a native matrimonial dispute, proceeded on through KARAMA to KOARU, where after another change of Carriers and a short spell, continued on past LELEFIRU to HABU HABU. Here I was pleased to note that a fairly decent effort had been made by the people, to clear the 'Forbidden Settlement' area, and that the new village was quickly taking shape, 14 Houses being completed and 17 still in the course of construction. Only 6 houses are being occupied on the old location, one being the Ferryman, and the other five elderly people who are awaiting the completion of houses being built for them on the new area, so that this whole matter, which has been drawn out for nearly two years, should be finally settled in a week or two.

Continued on to KUKIPI, where slight difficulty was encountered in obtaining Carriers, this was not the fault of the village people, as all the men were away working in the Plantation and Gardens, after getting six men from around the village, proceeded to MOTU MOTU, where the night was spent, the distance of 40 odd miles having been completed in a little under 11½ hours.

Number of Carriers employed: 28

Tuesday, 20th June.

Left MOTU MOTU at 6.15 a.m., and continued on along the coast to LESE, V.C. PUKARI of ULITAI having accompanied me as far here, this V.C. must undoubtedly be one of the best and most conscientious on the roll. Obtained fresh Carriers at LESE and continued to BIARU and thence to IOKEA. Held C.N.M., and six natives were found guilty and convicted

for refusing to carry for a Government Medical Patrol earlier in the month. The IOKEA village people were then assembled and the yearly prize for the best kept village was presented, for the year 1938/39. With the six recently convicted prisoners as carriers, I left IOKEA and continued along to OIAPU, and upon the kindly invitation of the Acting Manager of the P. A. P. Co., Ltd., the night was at the Company Mess. The 38 miles being covered in 10½ hours.

Number of Carriers employed: 20

Wednesday, 21st June.

Leaving OIAPU at 7.0 a.m., continued along the coast round Cape Possession to KIVORI, where Carriers were obtained, to relieve the prisoners, as far as WAINA. After leaving the last named village, slight difficulty was encountered by three creeks, which have no Ferry or village near, two of these were about 10 feet deep and had to be swum, PINU PAU being reached at about 3.0 p.m., here I was joined by my Porters' Servant, who had been sent on two days ahead. It was very nice to find that Mr. A.R.M. Healy had sent the Whalebark from KAIRUKU, and after battling against a head wind for three hours the Station was reached at about 6.0 p.m., where the night was spent, and I was royally entertained by Mr. & Mrs. Healy.

My instructions from the R.M. G.D. were to return the Kerema A.C. from Kairuku, and to ask the A.R.M. Kairuku for one from his strength, for the remainder of the journey into Port, but as the A.R.M. was away on Patrol, and Mr. A.R.M. Healy had just dispatched a Patrol to the Gailala Police Camp, he had only two A.C.'s on the Station, one lame, the other an orderly, so Mr. Healy suggested I take the Kerema A.C. on as far as OBU where I should probably be able to get into touch with Mr. Thompson, and seek his advice. Enquiries were made around the Station regarding various Gulf Division Tax Defaulters, and most of the information received from the respective villages was proved to be incorrect, however all information gathered has been included in a report on the whereabouts of Tax Defaulters from the Gulf.

Number of Carriers employed: 8

Two Prisoners on remand, who had been brought from Kerema, and one witness, were handed over to the care of Mr. A.R.M. Healy.

Thursday, 22nd June.

Left Kairuku by Whaleboat at 8.0 a.m., and crossed to DELENA, here a passing call was made on Mr. & Mrs. Chatterton at the L.M.S. Mission, the A.C. and Carriers going on ahead. Proceeded on towards OBU, but after covering about 15 miles, I was met by Mr. F. B. Ross of Obu Plantation, who invited me to drive back and spend the night with him. The invitation was gratefully accepted, especially as Mr. A.R.M. Thompson was due to arrive there also later in the afternoon. After a wash and clean-up further enquiries were made from the managers of the various Plantations around the HISIU and AROA Districts, and again the village information proved incorrect, as there are very few Culf Division natives working Casual on any of the Plantations, but a number of the managers expressed the opinion that there were quite a number of them hanging about the Plantations from time to time. Mr. Thompson arrived at Obu at about 4.0 p.m., and the remainder of the afternoon was put in playing a few enjoyable sets of Tennis. As Mr. Thompson was in the middle of Tax collecting and had A.C.'s. away on various duties, he instructed me to carry on into Port with the Kerema A.C., and to report to the Hon. the G.S. as soon as possible, so that the A.C. could be returned to Kerema without delay.

Number of Carriers employed: 2

Friday, 23rd June.

Left OBU at 6.45 a.m. and proceeded to HISIU, where Carriers were obtained, and the Iokea Prisoners returned with Mr. Thompson, then continued along the coast to MANU MANU, fresh Carriers again here, then on along the beach to GOROHU, where owing to the shortage of natives in the village, only half of the carriers could be changed, a canoe was also acquired here for crossing the numerous creeks in the vicinity, but owing to the rising wind this had to return after passing the major waterways, difficulty was then experienced on three or four occasions until KIDO was reached, where the night was spent.

Number of Carriers employed: 24

Saturday, 24th June.

Left KIDO at 6.15 a.m., and rounded the Red Boat Headland (VARI VARI) by canoe, then proceeded on along the beach to LEALEA, here it was interesting to see the natives land a very large Shark.

of the Shovel-nosed variety, which they had caught on the sand-bar in front of the village. Obtained fresh Carriers and continued on past PAPA to BOERA, where the village people crowded around with unlimited supplies of Paw Paws, after such a long association with the Gulf Division, this was too strange an occurrence to let pass, so a halt was called while a goodly supply of the fruit was demolished. New carriers were obtained, and I continued round the Bay to PORABADA, where it was found that all the older men of the village were away in the Gardens, or working on the roads, but there were quite a number of boys who had just about finished school, and when asked if they would care to carry, were only too pleased to do so, picked up the gear, and were off in fine spirits, these natives then carried right into Port, and proved to be the brightest and best carriers employed throughout the Patrol, arriving in Port Moresby at about 7.0 p.m.

At all the villages between AROA and Port Moresby enquiries were made regarding Gulf Natives, who were allegedly residing in these villages, but the same reply was received at each village, that every year about the same time, numbers of Gulf Natives passed through the villages, but that none were living in any of the villages permanently or even temporarily.

I reported to the Hon. the G.S. at 9.0 a.m. on Monday morning, and received instructions to return A.C. DOMMASI to Kerema, on the "Ronald S", with Mr. P.O. Rutledge, on Tuesday the 25th June.

GENERAL REMARKS

This Patrol was uneventful, and although no Tax Defaulters were apprehended, a great deal of information was gathered and checked up on, as to their whereabouts, this has all been entered in a special report.

Most noticeable was the difference in dispositions of the natives employed to Carry, of the Gulf Division and the Central Division, the former only because they know they have to, but the latter willingly and with a good grace. Regarding the A.C., he must be one of the best all round men in the force.

W. J. Good

